

*Please return to:*

FOR DEPOSIT ONLY  
CITIZENS FREEDOM FOUNDATION  
WASHINGTON, D.C. AREA  
P.O. BOX 113  
KENSINGTON, MARYLAND 20795

CITIZENS FREEDOM FOUNDATION  
WASHINGTON, D.C. AREA  
P.O. BOX 113  
KENSINGTON, MARYLAND 20795

STATE OF FLORIDA  
CITY OF CLEARWATER  
PINELLAS COUNTY

CITY OF CLEARWATER COMMISSION HEARINGS RE:

THE CHURCH OF SCIENTOLOGY

Clearwater City Hall  
Clearwater, Florida  
Thursday, May 6, 1982

RIZMAN COURT REPORTING  
18 TREMONT STREET  
BOSTON, MASSACHUSETTS 02108  
(617) 227-1688

2



1 City of Clearwater City Commission:

2 Charles LeCher, Mayor  
3 Thomas Bustin, City Attorney  
4 Anthony L. Shoemaker, City Manager  
5 Rita Garvey, City Commissioner  
6 Paul Hatchett, Vice Mayor  
7 James Calderbank, City Commissioner  
8 James Berfield, City Commissioner  
9  
10 Lucille Williams, City Clerk  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24

FOR DEPOSIT ONLY  
CITIZENS FREEDOM FOUNDATION  
WASHINGTON, D.C. AREA  
P.O. BOX 113  
KENSINGTON, MARYLAND 20795

9 Consultants:

10 Michael J. Flynn, Esquire  
11 12 Union Wharf  
12 Boston, Massachusetts 02109  
13  
14 Thomas Greene, Esquire  
15 12 Union Wharf  
16 Boston, Massachusetts 02109  
17  
18 Thomas Hoffman, Esquire  
19 12 Union Wharf  
20 Boston, Massachusetts 02109  
21  
22 Kevin Flynn  
23 12 Union Wharf  
24 Boston, Massachusetts 02109

I N D E X

<u>Witness</u>	<u>Page</u>
Ronald DeWolfe.....	5
Lori Taverna.....	109
Casey Kelley.....	230

E X H I B I T S

<u>Number</u>	<u>Description</u>	<u>Page</u>
20	Transcript from George Washington University, re L. Ron Hubbard	93
21	Biographical outline from the U.S. Navy, re L. Ron Hubbard	94
22	ALGOL Ship Log	95
23	Letter, dated October 16, 1947, from L. Ron Hubbard to the Veteran's Administration	98
24	Biographical outline from <u>Dianetics: The Original Thesis</u> , re L. Ron Hubbard	101
25	Biographical outline, re L. Ron Hubbard	106
26	Biographical outline, re L. Ron Hubbard	106
27	Cover of the book, <u>All About Radiation</u>	106
28	Book, <u>All About Radiation</u>	230
29	Book, <u>Dianetics: The Modern Science of Mental Health</u>	230



1 Clearwater, Florida  
2 May 6, 1982  
3 Morning Session

4 MR. LeCHER: Good morning, ladies and gentlemen.  
5 Participants and interested bystanders, please take  
6 your seats.

7 Good morning, again, and welcome back to the  
8 Clearwater City Commission Public Hearings. This is  
9 our second day, and I'd like to start again with the  
10 Pledge to the flag, led by Sid Klein, our Police Chief.  
11 And, also, the invocation will be given by our own  
12 vice Mayor, Paul Hatchett.

13 So, please rise.

14 (Whereupon, the Pledge of Allegiance  
15 was recited.)

16 MR. HATCHETT: Our Father, I ask for you by name  
17 on all of the earth, and we pray for Thine divine  
18 guidance during our times of real sincerity. Give us  
19 courage, give us strength and the ability to be  
20 reasonable, courageous, and honest. We ask that in Thy  
21 name. Amen.

22 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

23 Thank you, Mr. Hatchett. That's really very  
24 appropriate.

1           To those of you that are new to this, we have been  
2 through one day of hearing. We are now in our second  
3 day. And, of course, the Scientologists will have an  
4 equal time when our time is through. And we would hope  
5 that they would participate so that we can get an honest  
6 opinion about the business at hand with respect to  
7 Scientology.

8           Yesterday, we were talking to Mr. Ron DeWolfe, who  
9 is the natural son of L. Ron Hubbard, who had a surname  
10 of Hubbard at one time.

11  
12                       RONALD DeWOLFE, a witness herein,  
13 having been previously sworn by a Clerk for the City of  
14 Clearwater, was examined and testified as follows:

15           MR. LeCHER: And Mr. DeWolfe, you do understand  
16 that you were previously sworn in?

17           MR. DeWOLFE: Yes, I do.

18           MR. LeCHER: And anything you say is under the  
19 threat of perjury.

20           Mr. Flynn, do you understand that he does not have  
21 to be sworn in again; is that correct?

22           MR. FLYNN: That's correct, sir.

23           MR. LeCHER: All right.

24           Yesterday, Mr. DeWolfe, we were talking primarily

1       about the history of the organization, how you fit into  
2       it, and we kind of left off yesterday -- we were about  
3       to get into Dianetics and E-Meters. You could start  
4       there or you could backtrack and start wherever you'd  
5       like. I'm suggesting to you Dianetics and the E-Meter  
6       as a starting point, but it's up to you, sir.

7               MR. DeWOLFE: The E-Meter would be fine.

8               The E-Meter was invented by a Paul B. Mathieson  
9       in 1951. He was a chiropractor in Los Angeles. And he  
10      had been using it on his own and selling it on his own,  
11      and then brought it to my father. And for a short time  
12      through '51 and '52, he used his E-Meter but he would  
13      not let -- he would not let my father manufacture it.  
14      My father also demanded royalties and a piece of the  
15      action concerning its manufacture and sale.

16              So, then, through the '51 and '52 era and even possibly  
17      even into '53, we were having to purchase the E-Meter  
18      through Bob Mathieson. But what happened here, it was  
19      used in early Dianetic auditing, but when Bob would not  
20      turn the rights to the E-Meter over to my father or give  
21      him a royalty, my father quit using it. And there was a  
22      time period in there in which he totally invented and  
23      created various Scientology processes which did not  
24      require the E-Meter.

1           Then, later, we were with a Don Green in Washington,  
2           D.C., I think in 1954 or '55 -- a Don Green and Joe  
3           Wallace put together our own E-Meter and, all of a  
4           sudden, Scientology could now use E-Meters again. And  
5           we had -- he invented other processes that could be used with  
6           the E-Meter. It was a flow and ebb thing.

7           I think I want to make this point very clear:  
8           that the -- as long as my father had some control over  
9           the E-Meter in the beginning, then, it was used in  
10          Dianetics and Scientology. When he got into a war with  
11          Bob over money and we couldn't shake the E-Meter out of  
12          Bob's hands, then, we quit using the E-Meter. And then  
13          when they invented -- when Joe Wallace and Don Green  
14          in the mid-fifties in Washington, D.C. -- he then manu-  
15          factured -- had those two guys manufacture the E-Meter  
16          in the basement of our headquarters at that time which  
17          was 1812 19th Street, Northwest. And then it became  
18          popular. It depended upon his control of it, of the  
19          instrument.

20               MR. LeCHER: Did Mr. Wallace improve upon the  
21               E-Meter, redesign it --

22               MR. DeWOLFE: Joe Wallace and Don Green made it  
23               solid state. Before that, the E-Meter was a tube affair.  
24               a lot of tubes, and it was a fairly good size. It was

1           about the size of - I don't mean this as a joke - it  
2           was about the size of a breadbox. And then it also got  
3           to be a very big projection job, and it became more and  
4           more complicated. There were E-Meters with double dials,  
5           with four dials, with enough switches and dials on it to  
6           confuse you for a week. But -- and it got to the point,  
7           there were a few of them that were two feet by a foot  
8           by, say, eighteen inches tall and weighing about ten or  
9           fifteen pounds, which was kind of hard to lug around from  
10          one session to another, from an auditing session to  
11          another.

12                 MR. LeCHER: Is the E-Meter a deeply religious  
13                 symbol? If it is, I don't want to go into it any further.  
14                 Or is it used for other reasons? Like, a crucifix may --

15                 MR. DeWOLFE: Well, I'm testifying to the early  
16                 days where -- prior to, I believe, a court decision  
17                 where this now becomes a religious artifact. But in  
18                 those days it was not. So, I leave that to your decision  
19                 as far as whether to continue with it.

20                 But it was -- an E-Meter was basically a skin  
21                 galvanometer, a lie detector, and it would be technically  
22                 called a balanced wheatstone ridge, which is a very  
23                 simple basic electronic circuit.

24                 And one of the main things that I used to remember

1           about the E-Meter was that our favorite electrodes,  
2           which we put onto Campbell soup cans - and Campbell  
3           Soup probably made a great deal of money from us -- but  
4           there was a small, very small -- in those days anyway,  
5           particularly, the ones that plugged into the wall; today  
6           they're battery-powered, and when it was designed and  
7           built in the mid-fifties it was battery-powered. But  
8           the ones that plugged into the wall had a tendency to,  
9           because of the amount of very microscopic electrical flow  
10          through it, electroplate your hands. That is, that the  
11          tin covering or the metal covering of the Campbell soup  
12          cans would come off on your hands and so your hands  
13          smelled pretty wierd most of the time.

14                 But it was used in the beginning to -- as I said,  
15                 a crude lie detector. And when I say "crude," that's  
16                 a relative statement compared to the, for instance, the  
17                 present day polygraph that measures heartbeat, respira-  
18                 tion, et cetera, et cetera, you know, several different  
19                 patterns.

20                 So, anyhow, that kind of covers the E-Meter. As  
21                 I said, the point I wanted to make about the E-Meter  
22                 here is that it ran hot and cold with Dad, depending  
23                 upon his control of it. And he would say, like, "Well,  
24                 we don't need the E-Meter anymore because we have these

1 new great, wonderful processes and techniques which don't  
2 require the E-Meter." He said that because he couldn't  
3 use the E-Meter because Bob Mathieson wouldn't cough  
4 it up.

5 Let me back up to a couple of other areas here,  
6 if you don't mind. I finished off where I had -- was  
7 discussing --

8 MR. LeCHER: Go at your own pace, sir.

9 MR. DeWOLFE: Huh?

10 MR. LeCHER: Go at your own pace and back up if  
11 you want to.

12 MR. DeWOLFE: I'm sorry, I didn't hear you, sir.

13 MR. LeCHER: I said just go talk at your own pace  
14 and back up whenever you feel like it.

15 MR. DeWOLFE: Well, I was talking about in the  
16 beginning where you had -- I think I was referring to the  
17 question about franchises, ten percent, and successful  
18 organizations.

19 MR. LeCHER: Yes, sir.

20 MR. DeWOLFE: Very quickly, to recap: There was  
21 the original Dianetic Research Foundation, Elizabeth,  
22 New Jersey, and that folded because of AMA pressure.  
23 And then there was the foundation in Wichita, Kansas,  
24 and that folded because of AMA pressure and, also, because

1 of my father's taking off with all the money and fleeing  
2 in early 1952. So, getting together of organizations  
3 was rather difficult. But there were other people.

4 As an example, when they set up -- as good business-  
5 men, they set up very successful organizations, and I  
6 had mentioned a couple yesterday. And one that crossed  
7 my mind was in Phoenix, Arizona. There's two more that  
8 are pretty important because they formed the basis today  
9 of - and throughout the years - the various corporations  
10 and organizations.

11 In 1954, there was a J. Edward Farber, who had  
12 worked very hard and long in setting up the very first  
13 Church of Scientology in California. Looking at this --  
14 you have to look at this slightly in retrospect and  
15 within the context of the time of 1954, it wasn't all  
16 that easy to set up a very solid bullet-proof church  
17 corporation in which you could do anything within the  
18 corporate structure. So, the Chamber of Commerce had  
19 this in California. And here, again, it also demon-  
20 strates the front organization thrust of my father's,  
21 that is, many organizations which are very confusing  
22 and -- by the way, to me, Scientology is Scientology.  
23 I've always understood it that way. It doesn't make  
24 any difference to me about what the corporation says or



1 where the corporation is; it is a corporate-type of  
2 entity. To me, Scientology is Scientology, whether it's  
3 in Los Angeles or Clearwater or London or Quebec, Canada.  
4 It makes no difference; it's Scientology. And Scien-  
5 tology is L. Ron Hubbard.

6 And there's many, many times, hundreds of times,  
7 he would get into terrible rages about "This is mine;  
8 this is mine. I run it, I own it, and I created it.  
9 And nobody is going to make any money out of it except  
10 me." And that is a synthesis of a theme which was  
11 pushed at me hundreds of times and anybody at the  
12 planning sessions.

13 So, anyway, J. Edward Farber had this tremendously  
14 wonderful corporation in California which he was very  
15 proud of. And so, we whiplashed J. Edward Farber  
16 around and took the corporation over. He resigned and  
17 turned over the corporation to us.

18 Now, one of the things, too, about corporations  
19 is that I was one of the early signatories to the very  
20 first Scientology corporations. In all -- in any Scien-  
21 tology corporation, apparently --

22 MR. SHOEMAKER: I'm sorry, I did that.

23 MR. DEWOLFE: -- apparently, quote, unquote, run  
24 by Hubbard's -- my father always held signed, undated

1           resignations. Immediately -- the very second you were  
2           put on the Board of Directors, you signed at the same  
3           time. I did it and a lot of other people did it. You  
4           signed an undated resignation which, then, he kept in  
5           his safe. So, if you didn't play by his rules, all he  
6           had to do was put the date on it and that was it, you  
7           were out.

8           MR. LeCHER: What was the reason that he started  
9           Dianetics and went from Dianetics to a corporation for  
10          a religion? How did you get in -- why did you leave  
11          the Church of Scientology?

12          MR. DeWOLFE: Okay.

13          Well, you're going ahead a great many years and  
14          things. The -- how did Dianetics --

15          MR. LeCHER: Yes. What was the reason for convert-  
16          ing Dianetics to something else, to a religion?

17          MR. DeWOLFE: Well, first of all, he couldn't use  
18          Dianetics anymore. He had sold the rights to Don G.  
19          Purcell in Wichita, Kansas, and he couldn't use Dianetics.  
20          He couldn't use the techniques, he couldn't -- he sold  
21          the copyrights to the books. And he had fled out from  
22          Wichita with all of the monies of the Wichita foundation.  
23          But he couldn't, as I said, use it.

24          By the way, Scientology - the word "Scientology" -

1 is not original to my father; my father told me. And it  
2 is that it comes from the German "scientologie" - and if  
3 you ask me how to spell that, I don't know in German.

4 The best way I can really explain it very quickly:  
5 Very quickly, to bring you up to date, a little bit of  
6 biographical data here, autobiographical and otherwise.  
7 And when I was born - I think I mentioned it before - I  
8 was born at two pounds, two ounces and prematurely. My  
9 father had rather severely beaten my mother, and that's  
10 what caused that, while he was trying to get involved  
11 with black magic rituals.

12 But throughout all of my early years, I had been  
13 with him quite a bit off and on. And then, of course,  
14 there was the major trauma of the divorce from my mother  
15 and the bigamous marriage with Sarah. But in early  
16 1952 -- in early 1952, I went from Burlington, Washington,  
17 drove down, and started living with my father on a con-  
18 tinuous basis.

19 My very first connection -- my very first connec-  
20 tion with Dianetics or Scientology, of course, was when  
21 my father mentioned about the book, Dianetics, and about  
22 the article in Astounding Science Fiction and then, of  
23 course, the book. In 1950, I was living in Burlington,  
24 Washington and he arranged for my auditing, my very first

1 auditing.

2 My very first auditing was rather strange, because  
3 he had arranged it through the Seattle Dianetic group  
4 for me to commute from Burlington over there. But he  
5 told me that -- he told me two things: one was that I  
6 had to be -- he wanted me audited, and I had to be  
7 audited under an assumed name. He didn't want me to  
8 disclose who I was. And then he also told the auditors  
9 that he only wanted them to concentrate on my mother,  
10 because he didn't want to -- he didn't want me to dis-  
11 close anything about him. And I thought that was sort  
12 of interesting.

13 I kept that up for a couple of weeks. Then, I  
14 got tired of not being able to tell anybody who I was.  
15 And how can one be audited Dianetically or remember  
16 incidents from the past when you had to completely edit  
17 and delete anything concerning your father and concentrate  
18 on your mother, and at the same time not disclose who  
19 you were? It got to be -- and I wasn't very old at the  
20 time, I was sixteen, but I knew enough then to figure out  
21 that that was very confusing.

22 Then, I arrived in Phoenix, Arizona in early '52.  
23 He had just arrived from Wichita with Mary Sue. And the  
24 very first day -- the very first day I arrived, he wanted

1 me audited immediately. But I had been -- driven all  
2 night, and I was eighteen years old. I knew nothing  
3 about Scientology. All I had read was Dianetics: The  
4 Modern Science of Mental Health, and it never really  
5 interested me very much as a book when I was young.

6 So, after about a couple of weeks there, we got  
7 involved -- he asked me to sit down on the couch, and I  
8 was high on Benzedrine, Bennies. And we started doing,  
9 quote, "research" on a book called History of Man. So,  
10 we spent a couple, three days on that. Here's the  
11 book here, The Scientology History of Man; here's a copy  
12 of it. And all the incidents -- he did a few with Mary  
13 Sue, but the majority of incidents in it were off the  
14 top of my head, as I had upwards of twenty, thirty  
15 milligrams of Bennies in me.

16 MR. LeCHER: It's a very small book, The History  
17 of Man.

18 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes.

19 MR. LeCHER: How many pages --

20 MR. DeWOLFE: This is -- but the thing about this  
21 interests -- the interesting thing about the book is is  
22 that this is purported to be -- it is presented as these  
23 are incidents which are common to all -- everybody's  
24 past. This is the PR about the book; this is the thrust

1 of the book that these are early genetic incidents in  
2 the ancient primoral past of each and every man, woman,  
3 and child on earth. And it came out of my drug trip.

4 And the -- I don't know how many thousands of  
5 people have been audited on those particular incidents,  
6 like, return to the clam. That is where, genetically,  
7 you were a clam and you're having jaw trouble, and that  
8 was one of the bases of -- according to Scientology and  
9 my father, that's one of the bases of bad teeth, bad --  
10 having trouble with your jaws, because you were having  
11 an engram as a clam fifty trillion years ago. But --

12 MR. LeCHER: That may be considered to be religious.  
13 And judged primarily on its face, we really don't want  
14 to pursue that.

15 I'd like to ask you one more -- let's get back to  
16 the E-Meter.

17 MR. DeWOLFE: One quick thing, sir, I wanted to  
18 mention was that the areas I'm talking about in the  
19 fifties, it was not a religion then. We're talking  
20 about -- that didn't come in as a corporation until  
21 December 1953. Up through -- 1950 through '53, it was  
22 a science, so that's what I'm referring to here and  
23 I'm not getting into the area of beliefs in any way, as  
24 far as I personally am concerned.

1           MR. LeCHER: I realize that's a very fine line  
2 for us, too.

3           MRS. GARVEY: The book was written in '52.

4           MR. LeCHER: Then, the book was written - thank  
5 you, Mrs. Garvey - in '52.

6           Now, back to the E-Meter: Did the U.S. National  
7 Bureau of Standards describe the E-Meter as worthless as  
8 a diagnostic service?

9           MR. DeWOLFE: Yes. The FDA was concerned with the  
10 E-Meter because it was being used as a diagnostic tool,  
11 which, in fact, was true, I mean, the actual practice.

12          MR. LeCHER: The people that normally take these  
13 courses, are they the average run-of-the-mill person  
14 that you see in the street, or are they there because  
15 they're looking for help? I've read where the auditing  
16 can cure arthritis and leukemia. I've also read where  
17 your father cured an eighteen-month old girl - a child,  
18 I believe it was a girl - of leukemia.

19          MR. DeWOLFE: That's not true.

20          MR. LeCHER: Is it possible, do you think, that  
21 your father has those powers?

22          MR. DeWOLFE: I'm sorry, what was that?

23          MR. LeCHER: Do you think your father has those  
24 powers or is that a hoax?

1 MR. DeWOLFE: No, but those are claims. And --

2 MR. LeCHER: Tell me about those claims.

3 MR. DeWOLFE: Well, first of all, leukemia is  
4 cancer and, according to my father, all cancer stems  
5 from the center of man. The center of man in Scientology  
6 is sex. His logic is -- logic was at the time that he was  
7 talking about leukemia and cancer -- was that cancer is  
8 cells which are dividing, and dividing cells is a sexual  
9 thing and -- as in prenatal activity, the conception.  
10 And so, therefore, the basis -- the basis of all cancer  
11 is sex.

12 If you had any big bad problems with sex in the  
13 early childhood or something like that, then, this is  
14 what's causing your cancer. And --

15 MR. LeCHER: What about being a celibate?

16 MR. DeWOLFE: Mm?

17 MR. LeCHER: If you're a celibate, would that  
18 eliminate your possibility of having cancer?

19 MR. DeWOLFE: Well, that probably will cause can-  
20 cer because of your lack of sexual activity.

21 MR. LeCHER: I guess there's no way you can win.

22 MR. DeWOLFE: Correct.

23 And then, of course -- then, you know, compulsive  
24 sex or too much sex or something like that, that could



1           cause cancer, too.

2           MR. LeCHER: Was your father preoccupied with sex?

3           MR. DeWOLFE: Very much so, yes.

4           . Anyway, getting back to your question on leukemia,  
5 he has -- he had written many things about the ability of  
6 Dianetics and Scientology to cure cancer and, also,  
7 has reportedly, in those days -- of auditing an eighteen-  
8 year old baby -- eighteen-month old baby successfully  
9 with cancer.

10           And in my experience throughout Scientology, I  
11 have never seen any cure or remission or halting of  
12 cancer, period. And he had -- if you wait a second, I  
13 think I have -- this comes from - I don't want to get  
14 all involved in the whole thing - but this comes from  
15 a -- The Journal of Hubbard's Association of Scientolo-  
16 gists' International. You see, that was a, quote,  
17 "scientific organization," and quote, "not a religious  
18 organization." It was copyrighted in 1953, and quote:  
19 "Leukemia is evidently psychosomatic in origin, and  
20 at least eight cases of leukemia have been treated  
21 successfully by a Dianetic Center medicine had tradition-  
22 ally given up. The source of leukemia has been reported  
23 to be an engram containing the phrase," quote, "'it turns  
24 my blood to water,'" unquote.

1 MR. LeCHER: What does that mean?

2 MR. DeWOLFE: That means that eight cases of  
3 leukemia had been treated successfully by Dianetics.

4 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

5 MR. DeWOLFE: And that's -- it's not true, but  
6 that's what -- this was written by my father, L. Ron  
7 Hubbard.

8 MR. LeCHER: Tell me about The Old Man's Casebook?

9 MR. DeWOLFE: That's just where I pulled it from.

10 MR. LeCHER: The Old Man's Casebook?

11 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes. That's it; I just pulled it  
12 from there.

13 And --

14 MR. LeCHER: That's where the source of the cure  
15 of leukemia --

16 MR. DeWOLFE: The Old Man's Casebook by L. Ron  
17 Hubbard, and it's a -- this was the journal of Scientology  
18 which we put out. And he wrote virtually every word in  
19 all of the journals. And, also, you will find in some  
20 of those journals a man by the name of Tom Esterbrook,  
21 and that is L. Ron Hubbard, too.

22 MR. LeCHER: Did he ever have any other nom de  
23 plume, other than Esterbrook and L. Ron Hubbard?

24 MR. DeWOLFE: In Scientology, that was the two

1 main ones. He had them previously in his science fiction  
2 and western writing. Winchester Remington Colt was one  
3 of them. I believe --

4 MR. LeCHER: That's his gun or his name?

5 MR. DeWOLFE: That was his pen name.

6 He had Rene Lafayette. He wrote the book, The  
7 Dr. Methuselah Stories, under that name. I believe there  
8 was something like Captain Phillips. He had half a dozen  
9 different pen names.

10 MR. LeCHER: You left Scientology in 1959, and you  
11 began to disassociate yourself from the organization.  
12 According to this that I have, you watched the organiza-  
13 tion become a criminal conspiracy.

14 Can you tell me about that?

15 MR. DeWOLFE: Well, that is slightly incorrect. I  
16 was very much a part of the criminal conspiracy through  
17 the fifties; so it really wasn't me watching it become  
18 a criminal conspiracy. It would have to be I watched  
19 it continue to become a criminal conspiracy, to be more  
20 accurate.

21 Well, you must realize that power corrupts, and  
22 absolute power corrupts absolutely. But I wish to para-  
23 phrase on that, which is that, for instance, power is  
24 very enjoyable, and total and absolute power is ecstasy.

1           The -- Scientology is a power and money game. The  
2 definition of life in Scientology is what is called --  
3 it's a game. Life is a game, the same as Monopoly or  
4 playing Gin Rummy. And it doesn't have all that much  
5 reality to it, which means that you can pretty well do  
6 what you please. And one of -- my father always felt  
7 that he was above the law because he had created the law.  
8 He created whatever rules, regulations, and laws to be  
9 lived by.

10           There was only one sin in Scientology which was  
11 repeated to me at least a few thousand times, which is  
12 getting caught.

13           MR. LeCHER: Can you be more specific about --

14           MR. DeWOLFE: Well, I'll give you a basic view-  
15 point.

16           MR. LeCHER: We'll get into that a little later.

17           MR. DeWOLFE: I think, yesterday I alluded to  
18 several things that we did. For instance, in the Phila-  
19 delphia fiasco being served the papers by the U.S.  
20 Marshalls in December '53, I ran around and emptied all  
21 of the bank accounts out, which was, I guess, subverting  
22 the purposes and the desires of the federal court. And  
23 we grabbed up all of the mailing lists and ran off with  
24 them. And I remember going around all day before the

1 court thing and hoarding and putting away what money we  
2 could from a couple of -- I think we had two bank  
3 accounts - I didn't have, my father did - two bank  
4 accounts. And we went out in the country and I hid for  
5 a day or so to make sure that both the mailing lists  
6 and the money were protected.

7 This was money which, I would imagine, rightfully  
8 the federal court would have been interested in.

9 We did such things as -- when we took the organiza-  
10 tion over from John Naugerbauer and Helen O'Brien, I  
11 mean, we beat the hell out of them. I mean, that --

12 MR. LeCHER: Physically?

13 MR. DeWOLFE: Huh? This would be in 1953.

14 MR. LeCHER: Physically, did you beat them or  
15 mentally --

16 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes, yes.

17 And --

18 MR. LeCHER: Physically, you beat the hell out of  
19 them?

20 MR. DeWOLFE: Correct.

21 We -- that was Ernie Kitsch and I did that little  
22 number.

23 MR. LeCHER: Is that the man -- the one-armed man?

24 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes.

1 His favorite phrase was "I'm going to go have a con-  
2 versation with him." And it meant more than a conversa-  
3 tion.

4 And the -- as an example, transportation of --  
5 transportation of funds in and out of the country. And  
6 I carried a whole valise full of money into England. It  
7 wasn't breaking English law, but it was breaking American  
8 law. And -- because, after all, it was, you know, from  
9 a non-profit corporation that was going into my father's  
10 Dollar Account in England.

11 A Dollar Account is a special bank account. It's  
12 set up with permission of the Bank of England, and that  
13 meant that you could bring money in and out of that  
14 Dollar Account without any problem.

15 This and a couple of checks upset Immigration, and  
16 they sent me back to -- British Immigration, they sent  
17 me back to Ireland -- I mean, Holland, and I got brought  
18 before a member of Parliament. And that was a very  
19 interesting thing, but not really appropriate here.

20 I'm trying to remember specific things. Now,  
21 you're talking about --

22 MR. LeCHER: Well, we could --

23 MR. DeWOLFE: -- criminal activity?

24 MR. LeCHER: Yes.

1           If you could -- I'd like to just go through the  
2           outline, and my colleagues can get more specific things.  
3           And we could maybe take a break and you could refresh  
4           your memory.

5           But I also see that your sister, Kay, was apparently  
6           blackmailed by -- she thought she was by the Scientology  
7           movement. Is that true?

8           Do you have a sister, Kay?

9           MR. DeWOLFE: Yes, I do. That's her name.

10          MR. LeCHER: Apparently, she was given auditing  
11          and she was blackmailed by that auditing.

12          MR. DeWOLFE: Yes. I think she still is being --

13          MR. LeCHER: Do you want to talk about that?

14          MR. DeWOLFE: Certainly.

15          The -- do you mean, what the blackmail was or --

16          MR. LeCHER: Well, if it's too personal in nature,  
17          I don't really have to hear that.

18          MR. DeWOLFE: I don't mind telling you what I  
19          know.

20          MR. LeCHER: But, apparently, your sister, Kay,  
21          was blackmailed by her father's own organization?

22          MR. DeWOLFE: Yes.

23          To -- as one matter, to want to keep in touch  
24          with me would -- she's my full sister and I loved her

1 very much and still do. And we're a very tight, small  
2 family.

3 But still they wanted her to keep -- to keep tabs  
4 on me. And there are two pieces of information which  
5 would really, as far as she is concerned - as far as I  
6 am concerned, there isn't - but as far as she is con-  
7 cerned, would upset her a great deal and upset her  
8 husband's family and all of that.

9 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

10 Can you tell us about the Sea Org.? Did your  
11 grandfather die and, then, they sent the Sea Org. to pick  
12 up your grandfather's remains at the funeral and --

13 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes, that's correct.

14 MR. LeCHER: I'd like to hear about that. And what  
15 about the trust fund for Leif DeWolfe?

16 MR. DeWOLFE: That's my son.

17 MR. LeCHER: All right.

18 Can you tell us something about that?

19 MR. DeWOLFE: Well, my grandfather died in 1975;  
20 my grandfather was eighty-eight years old. Up to about  
21 thirty days before he became ill, he had a very solid  
22 good memory, and we were extremely close.

23 My grandfather was almost the total opposite of  
24 my father. My grandfather had spent thirty-six years in



1 the Navy as an officer and a gentleman.

2 And he had gotten very ill, and I didn't know that  
3 he was ill because nobody -- as soon as he got ill, my  
4 father had given instructions to my grandfather's wife,  
5 Marjorie - it was his second marriage - that I was not  
6 to be told. And so, the very second that he got ill,  
7 she was to inform my father. And they sent in a full  
8 Sea Org. crew to supervise things. Because I remember,  
9 when I did find out about it, I was terribly upset,  
10 because they hung around town and the very second he  
11 died, they took off everything that he owned. This was,  
12 possibly, an attempt to cover his past and, also to --  
13 cover the past of my father.

14 But, also, remember that he has a basic thing  
15 that he owns everything, and that was all of his things,  
16 he thought. So, he took them all.

17 And, also, later on, Marjorie had said -- he had  
18 told her and a couple of other relatives that I was  
19 somehow directly responsible for my grandfather's death,  
20 which is totally untrue.

21 MR. LeCHER: He then purchased a ship, a three  
22 hundred-foot transport with -- what was that ship used  
23 primarily for?

24 MR. DeWOLFE: Well, he was rather -- from what I

1 was reading and what I also knew of him in personal  
2 experience, being moved around. If you had a total  
3 litany of all the moves that we made organizationally --  
4 and I'm talking about geographically. It was back and  
5 forth around the United States a great deal, because he  
6 kept creating heat in wherever he was at, as I said,  
7 going back to the Elizabeth, New Jersey foundation.

8 He was very -- the British government were looking  
9 into the affairs of Scientology to a great extent. He  
10 has an org. in Rhodesia; Rhodesia kicked him out. In  
11 South Africa, they didn't like him.

12 MR. LeCHER: Would you say he was like a ship  
13 without a country?

14 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes.

15 So, what was -- that's why he got into the Apollo.  
16 That's why he got that so he could have some freedom of  
17 action of having a complete headquarters that could  
18 leave at a moment's notice. Because, ever since Eliza-  
19 beth, New Jersey, he has always been totally and fully  
20 prepared to leave at a moment's notice anywhere, any  
21 time. He's always kept great chunks of cash literally  
22 within arm's length so that if there was any problem he  
23 could just take off right out the window. Starting off,  
24 when I first saw it in 1952, as an example, the shoeboxes

1 full of money in his closet. All he had to do was throw  
2 it in a suitcase and go. Nobody could trap him that way.

3 And at one time I helped him transport - later on,  
4 in Washington, D.C. in the mid-fifties - two suitcases  
5 full of money that I, at two hundred forty pounds, could  
6 barely pick up.

7 MR. LeCHER: What kind of activities took place on  
8 that ship?

9 MR. DeWOLFE: I don't really know, sir. I was never  
10 on the ship. I wasn't there when he purchased it. I was  
11 just trying to explain his motivations for being on the  
12 ship.

13 So, I'm sorry, I can't answer that.

14 MR. LeCHER: If you can't answer that question,  
15 then, I'll go to something else.

16 MR. DeWOLFE: No, I wasn't on the ship --

17 MR. LeCHER: Well, what kind of activities went on  
18 on the ship? Was it for study or for --

19 MR. DeWOLFE: Well, it was a complete floating  
20 headquarters. He had everything there.

21 MR. LeCHER: Like a training ship or --

22 MR. DeWOLFE: Training ship, processing, auditing,  
23 including communication. This was all -- this was the  
24 private world headquarters of L. Ron Hubbard.

1 MR. LeCHER: Did they eventually -- did this ship  
2 eventually land or dock and are those people, those  
3 kinds of organizations being now performed by the Church  
4 at the Fort Harrison Hotel?

5 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes.

6 MR. LeCHER: So, that's a land-based operation that  
7 used to be on the ship?

8 MR. DeWOLFE: Right.

9 MR. LeCHER: All right.

10 Let's get to the 1960's and, apparently, the  
11 Scientology organization is being sued by the United  
12 States government and Hubbard claims there's a criminal  
13 conspiracy and operations against the U.S. and private  
14 citizens, et cetera, et cetera. Then, we get down to  
15 Fair Game Policies, disconnecting.

16 How do these -- all these fit in from the 1960's  
17 until the present, or at least as far as you know?

18 MR. DeWOLFE: Well, as far as, like, the R 245,  
19 we'll cover that and the Fair Game Policy.

20 The R 245 occurred, I believe, in December '54 or  
21 '53. He was at a congress - a congress would be like a  
22 convention - in Phoenix, Arizona, and all of the delegates  
23 were there and all of the attendees and members. And I  
24 was standing in the wings and he pulls out a Colt .45

1 semi-automatic pistol --

2 MR. LeCHER: Is that your father?

3 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes.

4 My father pulled out this 1911 Army model. I  
5 remember he had it for years; he stole it from the Navy.  
6 Anyway -- he also stole a machine gun from the Australian  
7 government which he kept for years, until the Australian  
8 government tracked it down and told him to give it back.

9 Anyway, he -- all of sudden, it was a total sur-  
10 prise, with his right hand he just pointed the gun at  
11 the floor and fired it. And he has said here and later  
12 wroten -- wow, written up by Al D. Hart, the editor of  
13 the Journal Magazine in the fifties, that it was a blank,  
14 but it wasn't, because, later on, I happened to see the  
15 hole in the floor.

16 But R 245 is a one-shot -- as he said on the stage  
17 then, a one-shot clearing process, particularly useful  
18 on psychiatrists. And everybody is laughing. Of course,  
19 when the gun went off, everybody jumped about a foot in  
20 the air and there was a lot of confusion because it was  
21 a pretty good sized hall, and a lot of people in the back  
22 really couldn't see the gun because it came out so  
23 quickly. And everybody was laughing kind of nervously.

24 And as he came off the stage towards me, I'm

1 laughing about it. And he looks me right in the eye  
2 and he says, "I mean it." Now --

3 MR. LeCHER: So, permanent clear is when someone --

4 MR. DeWOLFE: Permanent clear, yeah, you know  
5 that's -- the whole thing is quick exteriorization, that  
6 is, leaving -- an instant out of the body, a permanent  
7 experience, an instant clearing.

8 And through the fifties, it was -- at least, I  
9 considered it to be a joke. And then later, see, he got  
10 very serious about things that I had thought in the  
11 beginning were jokes, and that was one of them.

12 And the various policies of disconnect -- we had  
13 a slightly different one. You must realize one thing  
14 here that many, if not most, of the basic, very basic,  
15 policies of Scientology that are now written weren't  
16 written then. They were practiced first and, then, later  
17 on at sometime written. So, you will find that a lot of  
18 things that I am talking about and other people through-  
19 out the fifties talking about -- that it was the standard,  
20 routine operating procedure, but it just wasn't a written  
21 down thing. And later, it was written down and what  
22 he would term codified.

23 And the Fair Game Policy, he's had that as long  
24 as I've known him.

1 MR. LeCHER: That's the attack the attacker.

2 Fair Game is to --

3 MR. DeWOLFE: That's correct.

4 MR. LeCHER: -- pursue in an effort to destroy --

5 MR. DeWOLFE: Destroy the attacker.

6 And there's only one good defense, and that's to  
7 attack, quote, unquote.

8 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

9 And -- I'm trying to get through this so that we  
10 can all get a chance to question you further.

11 The Blown Student is the policy that is to kidnap a  
12 student that tries to leave.

13 MR. DeWOLFE: Oh, yeah, I invented that.

14 MR. LeCHER: You invented that?

15 MR. DeWOLFE: Sure.

16 I --

17 MR. LeCHER: Tell me about that.

18 MR. DeWOLFE: Oh. Let me back up slightly by  
19 saying this --

20 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

21 MR. DeWOLFE: -- I ran, as chief instructor, oh,  
22 about two dozen advanced clinic courses; those were  
23 six-week courses. I ran the very first one and, starting  
24 about 1953, I set up all of the training routines and all

1 the training programs. I invented and put them together.

2 I started doing the training at the age of eighteen  
3 in 1952. My father gave me a set of tapes that I hadn't  
4 heard, and I'm eighteen years old. And he says, "Here,  
5 teach these. I'm going to London." And I said, "Well,  
6 I don't know what they say." He said, "Well, just listen  
7 to them yourself and, then, talk about them to the  
8 students." Now, here's an eighteen year-old guy who  
9 went to three high schools, never graduated from any  
10 one of them, who had never studied the subject, and  
11 now I am the chief instructor and the chief training  
12 officer in Phoenix, Arizona in 1952. There was only  
13 one other man in the office, Al D. Hart.

14 So, here I am at what my father called later  
15 college. And that's the way I learned it. In fact,  
16 most of the tapes and lectures that you see clear  
17 through the fifties in the United States and quite a  
18 number of them in England was when I was there when  
19 those lectures were made live.

20 What the procedure was: He would give the lecture,  
21 giving a slight outline, and then I would stand up and  
22 teach what I just heard. So, I got very good at double  
23 talk and being pretty good at it.

24 Also, it was up to me to formulate and set up all



1 of the training programs, all of the training courses.  
2 I originated the grind, which -- I don't know if you  
3 hear that word today or not. But that was like eight  
4 o'clock in the morning for students to ten o'clock at  
5 night, seven days a week. You got grounded into the  
6 ground. Okay.

7 You also must realize that at that time I was  
8 pretty fat, sassy, and brassy - and as I was referring  
9 to earlier about the exercise of power - here's a kid  
10 eighteen, twenty, twenty-one, twenty-two who was teaching  
11 people that were doctors, lawyers, rich people, people  
12 like that, and so I really exercised power. They did  
13 what I told them to do or else. And I ran them ragged.  
14 I was probably equal or even rougher and tougher than  
15 a Marine GI, and that's no exaggeration.

16 Okay. As far as Blown Student goes, that was a  
17 big ego trip. Nobody blew my courses. In fact, even  
18 a few times, I'd handcuff them to their chairs. And I  
19 originated that that -- there's a basic thing with the  
20 road out is the road to -- that was a very early pre-  
21 religious thing -- statement of Dad's. So, the thing  
22 to do was to continue with -- continue with the course,  
23 continue with the training. So, they had to finish it.

24 And I was pretty big physically, and if somebody

1 ran out on me, I went and got him. And it might take me  
2 a half a dozen other guys to go get him, but I got him.  
3 And they came back. Several times, they dragged them  
4 back by their teeth, you know, "Just sit down."

5 A good friend of mine - I still know him - I chased  
6 him down the street. He locked himself in his apartment.  
7 I just knocked the door down, smashing and punching, and  
8 grabbed him by the collar and drug him screaming all the  
9 way back and threw him in the auditing chair -- in the  
10 training chair.

11 So, Blown Student, that's where that comes from.  
12 That originated the eighteen- to twenty-hour training  
13 schedules, the heavy SS style training methods.

14 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

15 We've gotten -- I'd like to ask you about Hubbard's  
16 fees --

17 MR. DeWOLFE: I'm sorry, sir?

18 MR. LeCHER: How much does your father charge -- or  
19 his organization -- does he charge -- well, I see Hubbard  
20 charges heavily for books and courses and, if he sets  
21 up organizations, he demands members pay him ten percent  
22 of their gross.

23 MR. DeWOLFE: That's right.

24 MR. LeCHER: So, if a man or woman makes \$10,000.00

1 a year, does that mean they will pay him one thousand --

2 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes, if they --

3 MR. LeCHER: Like a tithe?

4 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes, ten percent.

5 And I know his lecture fees, quote, unquote, for  
6 various conferences were a minimum of \$5,000.00. You've  
7 got to realize in the early and mid-fifties, \$5,000.00  
8 was a lot more money than it is today. And the same  
9 with the advanced clinical courses; it was for \$800.00.  
10 Every course was for \$500.00, and auditing was \$500.00  
11 per twenty-five hours. But in 19 -- as I said, in the  
12 mid-fifties, \$500.00 was a darn good average month's  
13 salary.

14 MR. LeCHER: Well, I see a man here charged  
15 \$25,000.00 in 1955 to a person who teaches a Doctor of  
16 Scientology course. Twenty-five thousand dollars is a  
17 lot of money today --

18 MR. DeWOLFE: Sure. Yes.

19 And he also guaranteed to clear a guy, Tom Maxwell  
20 of New Orleans, in '52. I remember that because we -- he  
21 must have had a dozen different auditors, including me,  
22 but he wouldn't get clear. And he had paid all this  
23 money to get clear, and it was one of those things that  
24 he just flat -- Dad just flat guaranteed to clear him.

1 MR. LeCHER: Every six months, apparently, your  
2 father came out with a new discovery; is that true?

3 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes, because that was just about the  
4 time period it took to teach one course to -- and interest  
5 would start to lag a little bit. And so, Dad had an  
6 insatiable desire for an awful lot of money. He would  
7 come in -- and he would come up with new processes and  
8 new techniques.

9 So, it was set up fairly well routinely on almost  
10 a six-month basis of new courses, new things.

11 MR. LeCHER: Every time he got in trouble with  
12 the authorities and there was a law case, did he go out  
13 and pass the hat amongst the various missions to raise  
14 fees? I see that he raised \$100,000.00 for fees. Was  
15 that for legal fees or was that just for fees for his --

16 MR. DeWOLFE: I don't have any knowledge about that  
17 particular incident.

18 But the -- during the fifties, there was not much  
19 legal trouble. He -- as I said, he would take an organi-  
20 zation over or -- everything accrued to him. He signed  
21 on every bank account; he and Mary Sue Hubbard were the  
22 only two people that could sign on the major bank  
23 accounts. During the fifties, in a couple of organiza-  
24 tions, there were a couple of other women or men

1           who would sign, which he -- in the mid-fifties, but  
2           that was mostly, I guess you would call, housekeeping  
3           accounts, just to pay the utilities, et cetera.

4           But --

5           MR. LeCHER: Why does the organization cause people  
6           to work so hard. Like, I see that they may work fourteen  
7           hours a day at little or no pay with virtually no sleep.  
8           How can you think -- what's the answer -- how can you  
9           continue to work this way seven days a week, and why  
10          must you work so hard to be a Scientologist?

11          MR. DeWOLFE: Well, as I -- I want to point out that  
12          I left in 1959, and I don't know as much about --

13          MR. LeCHER: You said that you had the Blown -- you  
14          devised the Blown Student --

15          MR. DeWOLFE: The Blown Student, yes. Right.

16          MR. LeCHER: -- and brought them back --

17          MR. DeWOLFE: That set the tone and the standard  
18          for the long, drawn out, heavy amounts of times that  
19          people had to put in it. Also, the pay was incredibly  
20          low I can remember, even in the fifties. Sometimes,  
21          even then, people in the organization were only getting  
22          five or seven or ten dollars a week, and they were living  
23          sometimes a dozen to a room.

24          All the money went to Dad and it was kept as tight

1 as he could financially about paying things out. What  
2 is true: If you're not receiving much money and you're  
3 putting a great deal of -- see, we had a goal to clear  
4 the planet, and everybody was being very dedicated about  
5 it.

6 But another problem he had too, then, of course,  
7 was health. Now, remember that psychiatry and medicine  
8 was one of our major enemies and opponents. And, of  
9 course, since Scientology Dianetics could cure and  
10 alleviate anything and everything and had the answer to  
11 all of man's problems, one did not go to doctors. Of  
12 course, one didn't have enough money to anyway, but one  
13 did not go to doctors. And people's health suffered a  
14 great deal. And there's quite a number of people that I  
15 know personally that suffered a great deal because of  
16 that.

17 MR. LeCHER: All right.

18 One other question before I turn it over to my  
19 colleagues.

20 Do you think that people who are in Clearwater who  
21 parade up and down the street -- do you think they are  
22 dangerous to themselves or to the people of Clearwater?

23 MR. DeWOLFE: Are they dangerous to themselves?

24 MR. LeCHER: Or to the people of Clearwater?

1 MR. DeWOLFE: Both.

2 MR. LeCHER: Would you like to explain that?

3 MR. DeWOLFE: It's not really easy to explain.

4 But -- first of all, they really don't know what they're  
5 doing. The average -- the average people coming in the  
6 door to Scientology, until they get to the very, very  
7 top, they don't realize that they buy step by step. They  
8 start believing all of the various falsehoods, like,  
9 for instance, L. Ron Hubbard's past, et cetera. And  
10 they can do -- they just don't know what they're doing.  
11 And --

12 MR. LeCHER: Well, do you feel -- if your father  
13 should die of natural causes, would it -- what effect  
14 would that have on the faithful?

15 MR. DeWOLFE: I think they would -- I really have  
16 no way of predicting, but I think that there's a couple  
17 of quotes that my father used to say all the time that  
18 really scares me to death. He at one time was also  
19 talking about really taking on the world. And I remember  
20 in 1958 an example which scared me to death and started  
21 myself thinking -- he wanted me to devise a plan to  
22 try to steal an H-bomb.

23 MR. LeCHER: Your father wanted you to steal an  
24 H-bomb?

1 MR. DeWOLFE: Huh?

2 MR. LeCHER: Your father wanted you to steal an  
3 H-bomb?

4 MR. DeWOLFE: Yeah. He wanted me to --

5 MR. LeCHER: From whom?

6 MR. DeWOLFE: Anybody and everybody.

7 We got -- I never got into it, because I said,  
8 "Oh, no, thank you." And sort of -- things went click  
9 in my head, and I said, "I don't -- I have two children  
10 and I don't want to get involved in that." And that was  
11 in late 1958.

12 MR. LeCHER: He wanted you to steal the parts or  
13 the whole bomb?

14 MR. DeWOLFE: No. He wanted a whole package.

15 The -- but the -- as an example, one of the things  
16 he said to me was that - he said it many, many times -  
17 he said, "Don't call it murder, call it suicide." And  
18 there's another quote, "I connotate loyalty as the  
19 highest ethic." That means, "Follow me." That means,  
20 "Total dedication, total loyalty to me, L. Ron Hubbard."

21 And that's the one thing that he put before any  
22 and all -- everything. And --

23 MR. LeCHER: Because of --

24 MR. DeWOLFE: So, anyway, that would lead me to



1 believe that this -- knowing as much as I know about it,  
2 that --

3 MR. LeCHER: I will not pursue that anymore at  
4 this point.

5 One other question: Is it -- do you think that the  
6 organization wants to control our economic system?

7 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes.

8 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

9 I would like to ask Mr. Hatchett if he would like  
10 to ask any --

11 MR. FLYNN: Mayor, may the witness make one more  
12 statement about a particular area before we get into  
13 questions?

14 MR. LeCHER: Certainly.

15 MR. DeWOLFE: Okay, sorry.

16 I left Scientology November 23rd, 1959. I tried  
17 to do one or another thing up till about 1962, and that  
18 didn't work too well. So, then, I got a job.

19 During the -- almost immediately upon my leaving,  
20 on January 3rd, 1960, my father sent me a telegram  
21 threatening to have me arrested for the stealing of a  
22 mailing list. There were other threatening telegrams  
23 and activities in which he was applying to me the  
24 standard tech of attack and destroy, but he was applying

1 it to me. I helped him do it, and I thought this was  
2 kind of incredible. But he turned around and tried to  
3 destroy me.

4 He said -- then, this happened in 1960 and kept  
5 up with a whole variety of things, which are really  
6 unimportant, but -- at this juncture and to the question.

7 So, I got very angry and upset because I had the  
8 children, and I didn't -- the only thing I knew how to  
9 do in the world was auditing, and I couldn't really --  
10 I had a hard time getting a job because I didn't know  
11 how to do anything, except, you know, how to be a  
12 ridiculous rock star jumping around, pushing students  
13 around.

14 Anyway, I left originally, by the way, very --  
15 which is very important to this thing -- is because of  
16 my children. I didn't want my children involved. I had  
17 had a pretty well messed up, turned around childhood.  
18 And the weekend around November 23rd, my wife - twenty-  
19 years at the moment - she just flatly -- she's the type  
20 of person that's very calm, cool, and collected; she  
21 gets angry about once a year -- about once every five  
22 years.

23 She flatly just came out and said, "Okay, you've  
24 got a choice between me and the children or Scientology.

1       Make up your mind." This was on a Friday. And I said,  
2       "Okay. It's you and the children." Zip, off we went.  
3       And -- so, that was one of the basic reasons I left,  
4       plus the fact that I was getting very tired of being --  
5       of all of the scam and the con and the fraud.

6       And also -- even though I was L. Ron Hubbard, Jr.,  
7       I wasn't being paid much more than the people struggling  
8       for seven and ten and \$25.00 a week. I just didn't have  
9       any money. Okay. That's one of the basic reasons --  
10      and which I now have six children, five of them up and  
11      grown and all of that.

12      In 1962, I got very angry and upset. All I wanted  
13      to do with Scientology was to forget it, which was an  
14      impossible situation. I've tried to do it for twenty-  
15      three years. So, I decided, "Well, the heck with it."  
16      It's one of those things that's, I believe, humanly  
17      impossible to either cover your past or to turn a blind  
18      eye to it or forget it.

19      I -- so, in 1962, I contacted law enforcement and  
20      said, "Do you want to hear a few things?" And starting  
21      off from there, I got involved in an E-Meter case that  
22      the FDA brought against Scientology and, also, an IRS  
23      case, and helping other lawyers, authors over the years.  
24      And -- so, it's just a matter of disseminating information.

1           Okay. Well, I got involved in the IRS case, and  
2           I don't quite at this instant have the exact dates at  
3           my fingertips. And they were really pretty upset that  
4           I had appeared in public and started spilling the beans,  
5           even though it was highly limited about strictly  
6           financial affairs.

7           And so, about 1972, they got -- they embroiled me  
8           into a sales organization in Beverly Hills that I, in  
9           the beginning, didn't realize was a Scientology front  
10          organization that Bob Thomas had set up with an Alan  
11          Walters to suck me in and try to nail my hide to the  
12          barn door. At that -- this was, I believe, in the early  
13          part of '72. I would have to check around on dates to  
14          give you the exact date.

15          But I walked there -- I walked in one night to --  
16          thinking it was a sales' meeting, and it was Bob Thomas --  
17          Bob Thomas, by the way, at the time was the Guardian  
18          U.S. I mean, he was the head of all of the Guardian  
19          Offices in the United States. That's what I understood  
20          at the time.

21          And the -- he starts telling me how I was such a  
22          terrible, awful person, et cetera. I'm using very nice  
23          language which wasn't the exact phrasing. I do feel  
24          constrained about that, about the fact that he wanted

1 me to take back the testimony that I gave in the case.  
2 He wanted me to recant all of the various things that  
3 I had said about Scientology, which, up to that time,  
4 had been very honest, truthful, and factual, and given  
5 under oath, as it is today, which, by the way, since  
6 I left Scientology is something that I consider to be  
7 quite valuable and I cherish a great deal. I'm talking  
8 about the laws and the constitution, and I take my oath  
9 as something very serious.

10 MR. LeCHER: You were the Founder's son and you  
11 were there since the beginning and you had --

12 MR. DeWOLFE: I would like to finish this.

13 MR. LeCHER: I'm sorry, sir.

14 MR. DeWOLFE: But I just had to slow up a little  
15 bit because I do get just slightly emotional about this.

16 MR. LeCHER: Sorry to --

17 MR. DeWOLFE: That's all right. It's very impor-  
18 tant.

19 So, anyway, Bob Thomas - to make a long story  
20 short or we'll be here until -- to make a long story  
21 short, showed me photographs of my children going to  
22 and from school. And he -- we got calls in the night.  
23 My wife was scared to death with calls; strange people  
24 would be looking through the window of our little house.

1 I believe at the time that I was working for  
2 Sales Training, Incorporated, which was a thing about  
3 selling sales courses in Los Angeles. And I didn't  
4 have -- I didn't have any money, and I lived in a very  
5 small house. I think the house was -- probably, if you  
6 put it all together, you could fit, maybe, two of them  
7 in your chamber here.

8 And so, they wanted me to recant. I had refused.  
9 And then, he brought in about how my father still loved  
10 me and how I should -- I shouldn't do such terrible  
11 things to dear, sweet, wonderful Dad. And then, he --  
12 what happened was -- because they wanted me to recant.  
13 And so, because I was under duress at the time because  
14 I was scared stiff -- there's a lot of things that  
15 happened in Scientology that I haven't brought up at  
16 the hearings simply because they are not really apropos  
17 to here.

18 And I hadn't been out of Scientology really that  
19 long, and it -- I didn't know what the legal ramifica-  
20 tions were and I didn't want other things to get out  
21 about -- I mean, I didn't -- I was scared of police, not  
22 in the way they -- I was scared that somewhere along  
23 the line, and throughout -- the other things I did in the  
24 fifties might be coming out and they might try to black-

1 mail, which they did.

2 And so, I signed a thing recanting the testimony.  
3 If you carefully examine that, I don't think it has a  
4 great deal of legal validity. But that occurred in 1971,  
5 '72.

6 This also had -- was in relationship to a --  
7 Paulette Cooper had written a book -- had written a  
8 book, The Scandal of Scientology, and getting involved  
9 in the writing of an article called "A Look Into  
10 Scientology" or "One-Tenth of Scientology." Also,  
11 there's a Robert Kaufman who wrote a book called Inside  
12 Scientology, and he was going through a lot of hell  
13 trying to get it out. And evidently, Paulette Cooper  
14 was all involved and getting sued in a real donnybrook  
15 with Scientology.

16 And I had -- I had read the book. In fact, I  
17 found the book on the newsstand. I didn't even know the  
18 book existed until I saw it on the newsstand. I picked  
19 it up and read it and, then, I called Paulette Cooper  
20 and things led to another in my involvement in giving  
21 her information. A Maurice Gerulius of Nuclear Press  
22 wanted an introduction to the book, Inside Scientology,  
23 by Robert Kaufman.

24 And, of course, Scientology didn't want me to

1 write the introduction. And, of course, they were trying  
2 to destroy Paulette Cooper and they were trying to  
3 destroy Maurice Gerulius, the publisher of the Nuclear  
4 Press, and they were trying to destroy Robert Kaufman.  
5 And then, they were also trying to destroy me.

6 And then, in order to protect my wife and my  
7 children and quite literally to protect them - I mean,  
8 the other people involved - I signed the recant.

9 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

10 Before this meeting started, we said that we might  
11 like to take a break for five or ten minutes. Would you  
12 like to take one now or --

13 MR. DeWOLFE: That would be nice.

14 MR. LeCHER: It would be nice to take a break?  
15 All right.

16 Before we start with our questions, we'd like to  
17 take a short five- or ten-minute break and then come  
18 right back.

19 (Whereupon, a recess was taken.)

20 (Whereupon, the hearing resumed.)

21 MR. LeCHER: Please take your seats, Commissioners,  
22 staff, and consultants, and witnesses.

23 Commissioners, I know that we have a very interest-  
24 ing witness and we'd like to question him at length, but



1 if we could keep it brief. We have many others to go  
2 and time may be running out. And we also must quit  
3 early tonight because we have a Commission meeting at  
4 five. So, we will be here for virtually all day and  
5 all night.

6 As far as tonight, I would like, if possible, to  
7 quit at ten so that we can get home and be here at nine  
8 tomorrow morning again.

9 So, I would ask if you would be brief and to the  
10 point -- nor do I want to stifle any questions you may  
11 want to ask, too.

12 We're going to lead off with Mr. Hatchett now,  
13 so everybody has a chance to lead off first. We're  
14 going to alternate as the various witnesses come before  
15 us.

16 So, now, I'd like to introduce to you Paul Hatchett,  
17 the vice Mayor, who will lead off.

18  
19 RONALD DeWOLFE, Resumed.

20 MR. HATCHETT: Mr. DeWolfe, is it true you lost  
21 power in the Church before you left?

22 MR. DeWOLFE: I lost power in the Church?

23 MR. HATCHETT: Lost power in the Church of Scien-  
24 tology before you decided to leave? Was your power base

1           waning?

2                   MR. DeWOLFE: No.

3                   MR. HATCHETT: You still had --

4                   MR. DeWOLFE: I was Executive Secretary of -- when  
5 I left.

6                   MR. HATCHETT: I read in the notes about an entry  
7 of your son's trust fund in --

8                   MR. DeWOLFE: Well, my father believed that every-  
9 thing that my grandfather and grandmother owned belonged  
10 to him. My grandfather had set up a trust fund -  
11 unbeknownst to me until he died and his Will was  
12 probated - and, evidently, my father wanted it. It was  
13 an educational trust fund so that my son, Leif, my oldest  
14 son, could go to college. And it amounted to about  
15 ten, \$12,000.00.

16                   Later on, evidently, through my sister, they had  
17 sent a poison pen letter to the insurance company, saying  
18 I had misappropriated the funds and I had misspent the  
19 money and fouled up in various ways. And -- so, that  
20 took a little bit of juggling around to sort things out.

21                   But in the very beginning with the attorneys, it  
22 was a legal matter. So, I had a very good attorney  
23 that handled all of the estate problems, what have  
24 you, and lean on the matter. And, of course, there was

1 the original trustees of the People's Bank in Burlington  
2 and, of course, the insurance company and the probate  
3 court, the probate court in Seattle, Washington. So,  
4 the whole thing, I was -- it was kept very legal and  
5 very proper and, in general, I handled very little of  
6 the money and the arrangements.

7 But anyway, it was just a matter to try to gain  
8 control of the money or keep my son, Leif, from being  
9 able to use it for his education, which he did use it  
10 for.

11 MR. HATCHETT: Well, the crux of my prior ques-  
12 tion -- is it still in force? Does your son still have  
13 benefit of the trust fund?

14 MR. DeWOLFE: No, no, no. It was only ten or  
15 \$12,000.00, and he had to work and we had to work to  
16 get him through college. He graduated in -- college  
17 in less than four years with about a 3.95 grade average.

18 MR. HATCHETT: All right, thank you.

19 I'm going to ask you a few rapid fire questions.

20 MR. DeWOLFE: Sure.

21 MR. HATCHETT: Your father wrote from the top of  
22 his head you kept emphasizing.

23 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes, correct.

24 MR. HATCHETT: A lot of fictional writing.

1 MR. DeWOLFE: That's correct.

2 MR. HATCHETT: Apparently, you did the same.

3 MR. DeWOLFE: No, not throughout the period there.  
4 I had written part of a book, as far as my own writing  
5 is concerned. I wrote all of the techniques and pro-  
6 cesses in a book which was published in England called  
7 Creative Learning. That was a series of processes used  
8 for -- on children in school.

9 The fictional thing would be, for instance, like,  
10 The History of Man, coming up and creating the incidents,  
11 as I mentioned the clam, that type of thing. But I have  
12 written very little of anything after Scientology.

13 MR. HATCHETT: All right, thank you. That satisfies  
14 me.

15 You mentioned, also, that -- I imagine, your  
16 father deserted you, and you mentioned that he sent very  
17 little money back for food and clothing.

18 MR. DeWOLFE: I'm sorry, I didn't quite hear that.

19 MR. HATCHETT: Your father sent very little money --

20 MR. DeWOLFE: That's --

21 MR. HATCHETT: -- for food and clothing.

22 MR. DeWOLFE: That's correct.

23 MR. HATCHETT: Did he desert the family; is that  
24 what you really said?

1 MR. DeWOLFE: He sent very little money or used  
2 very little money. At one time he had a boat -- excuse  
3 me. He sold a story and I believe it was about twenty-  
4 five hundred dollars. He went down to the post office  
5 to get the check - and he was gone all day and we  
6 couldn't figure out where he went - and he bought a  
7 yacht. And we didn't have much food. As I said, my  
8 father's support came from my mother and also came from  
9 my grandparents to a very great extent. And it was  
10 pretty much of a hard scramble for money throughout the  
11 thirties and the forties.

12 MR. HATCHETT: Did you ever have a desire to be  
13 number one in the Church of Scientology order or hier-  
14 archy?

15 MR. DeWOLFE: Sure; sure.

16 MR. HATCHETT: Sure?

17 MR. DeWOLFE: Yeah.

18 MR. HATCHETT: The reason I ask you all these  
19 questions: It would appear to me there's a father and  
20 son rift, you know, a real falling out. And may this  
21 not be just a vendetta against Dad?

22 MR. DeWOLFE: No, no.

23 MR. HATCHETT: Why should I believe you?

24 MR. DeWOLFE: Well, first, there've been, like,

1           twenty-three years under the bridge. The -- you must  
2           realize one thing about me is I'm the same person now as  
3           I was then, except it's like I lived two different lives.  
4           Then, I loved what I did, and I, also, now love what I  
5           do, which is -- I have -- I have my wife and I have my  
6           children. That's what's become the most important thing  
7           to me.

8           And it was a -- to put it in oversimplification,  
9           it was a scientific -- excuse me, a science fiction --  
10          a science fiction world, and I've come to appreciate  
11          reality and truth a great deal. In those days, we  
12          treated the constitution and the laws around like they  
13          were toilet paper. And I've learned to appreciate those  
14          a lot more recently.

15          And another thing, too, is that the truth and  
16          facts about Scientology and L. Ron Hubbard are slowly  
17          and surely being brought out by other people, also. In  
18          my own personal opinion, I am even a superfluous being  
19          right here, right now because you have enough witnesses,  
20          you have enough affidavits, you have enough documenta-  
21          tion - so does the federal government, so does the state govern-  
22          ment - to certainly see that the facts and truth of  
23          Scientology, Dianetics, and the life of L. Ron Hubbard  
24          come out.

1           And it is -- and this is going to sound like kind  
2 of a mealy-mouthed, hollow statement, but it's really  
3 quite true because I do have the facts and truth in  
4 being able to stand up and tell what I know.

5           But as an example on the life of L. Ron Hubbard,  
6 it's easily documented, not through what I say but what  
7 other people say, by bits and pieces of his past, the  
8 papers, the documentation. So, vendetta? No.

9           I've also learned another thing -- I'm sorry.  
10 I've also learned another thing, which is that -- I was  
11 all very emotional about it in the early days after I  
12 left and began to hate and what have you. But I've  
13 learned that hate only does one thing, which is consume  
14 the person doing the hating. And so, I've absolutely  
15 refused to hate him. And people can't understand this  
16 man who has done all this stuff, how can his son not hate  
17 him? I refuse to hate, because if I hate him, then, this  
18 gives my children the right to hate me or my -- or other  
19 people the right to hate me kind of thing.

20           So, those are all these heavy, negative emotions and  
21 feelings I've been able to cut out.

22           MR. HATCHETT: My last question -- thank you.

23           Do you know for a fact whether your father is  
24 still living?

1 MR. DeWOLFE: No. I have a -- I mean, I haven't  
2 seen his dead body in a coffin.

3 But over the years, we have written back and forth.  
4 He has -- he kept a secret address down in Los Angeles  
5 that non-Scientology types and family would write. I  
6 have it, if you wish it; I don't think I have it with me,  
7 but it's a post office box number. But over the years,  
8 all of a sudden, about -- I would say somewhere between  
9 1979 -- 1975 to 1979 and even more recently, some of  
10 the letters I've received -- there's a complete change  
11 in syntax. He has a very special way of stringing words  
12 together, which, after reading umpteen million of them  
13 ever since I've been a kid, I can recognize. And just  
14 bits and pieces and that sort of thing leads me to believe  
15 that he just possibly might be, but I don't know.

16 MR. HATCHETT: Thank you very much.

17 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Shoemaker, do you have any  
18 questions?

19 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mr. DeWolfe, apparently, from what  
20 you've indicated, many of the procedures which are  
21 currently used were actually created in the time that  
22 you were still with your father, and in here did it  
23 classify as Dianetics or else for the Church of Scien-  
24 tology?



1 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes, that's correct.

2 MR. SHOEMAKER: Did you -- were you --

3 MR. DeWOLFE: There's been little or no change  
4 in the actual basis.

5 MR. SHOEMAKER: Could you briefly explain what the  
6 purpose of auditing is, for example, how you came up  
7 with -- not necessarily you, but your father or whoever  
8 came up with the idea of auditing?

9 MR. DeWOLFE: The -- as I said, auditing was a --  
10 is a term used in accounting to -- you have to go back  
11 to the basic theory of Dianetics as it was set up: any  
12 and all man's ills are mentally caused, based. And it's  
13 based in what is called an engram, that are -- that is,  
14 moments of pain in unconsciousness. So, auditing would  
15 be the erradication of moments of pain in unconsciousness  
16 and discomfort and et cetera in one's past and sub-  
17 consciousness. I'm talking about Dianetically at the  
18 moment.

19 MR. SHOEMAKER: Yes.

20 MR. DeWOLFE: Dianetics.

21 So, that is the basic modus operandi of it, the  
22 basics of what auditing is.

23 Auditing, physically, is basically - in the old days  
24 of Dianetics - laying down on the auditing couch, somewhat

1 similar to the psychiatrist's couch, and you would sit  
2 there and return people into the past and get very much  
3 involved in, for instance, pre-natal experiences, birth,  
4 and other areas of trauma. As I said, it was a do-it-  
5 yourself psychoanalysis or psychotherapy.

6 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mr. DeWolfe, do you personally --  
7 do you have firsthand knowledge of how the material that  
8 was obtained for the auditing process was used?

9 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes.

10 Of course, everybody was told that the files were con-  
11 fidential, that they were treated as if they were files  
12 of, say, a doctor or a priest or an attorney. And they  
13 were, in the main, by most people, but -- it was quite  
14 inviolate. But of course, Dad and I had complete access  
15 to it.

16 And one thing I ought to mention is that - it's  
17 kind of embarrassing to mention - I'm the one who  
18 originated the bugging of auditing rooms in the Hubbard  
19 Guidance Center in Washington, D.C. so we could pick up  
20 on what was going on in an auditing session. And what  
21 I told everybody at the time was that most of the people  
22 that worked in the Hubbard Guidance Center -- the Hubbard  
23 Guidance Center was the auditing department. It was  
24 the -- where people got their auditing.

1           And -- but most of the people there were students  
2 of mine. So, I put the microphones in and the speakers,  
3 et cetera, and the tape recorders so that I could monitor  
4 their progress as students. That's what they were told.

5           But their files were used, as I said, for pressure,  
6 blackmail, and all these other -- some of those bits and  
7 pieces back in -- yesterday.

8           MR. SHOEMAKER: How -- how was the Fair Game  
9 Policy created? Where was the origin? What -- what --

10          MR. DeWOLFE: The origin simply was that if anybody  
11 gave us any problem, any trouble, why, we'd just attack  
12 them. We had -- we were pretty successful at it.

13          And if you're talking about power and what have  
14 you, that was a lot of fun to take on the FBI, take on  
15 the IRS, take on the government, take on anybody and  
16 whip it out. And as I said, I'm twenty -- in the early  
17 twenties, and we're stomping the hell out of people and  
18 getting away with it. But the point -- that's pretty  
19 heady stuff.

20          But that's not -- what the Fair Game was is that --  
21 again, it falls back to the same basic idea, which is  
22 total destruction: do whatever you -- was necessary to  
23 get the job done.

24          MR. SHOEMAKER: You had mentioned before that you

1 had actually created what was called at that point the  
2 grind policy.

3 MR. DeWOLFE: Yeah.

4 MR. SHOEMAKER: What was the purpose of that  
5 policy where the students were required to work long,  
6 extended periods of time?

7 MR. DeWOLFE: Well, we had a lot to teach them,  
8 plus it was a very good control mechanism. Very tired  
9 people are very receptive.

10 MR. SHOEMAKER: I see. So, it's a control  
11 mechanism --

12 MR. DeWOLFE: You see, we were controlling the  
13 body. If I had a walking microphone and you had the time,  
14 I'd demonstrate it for you.

15 MR. SHOEMAKER: The --

16 MR. DeWOLFE: By the way, as a matter of example,  
17 anything I talk about, I'm more than happy to demonstrate.

18 MR. SHOEMAKER: The -- the other one, Mr. DeWolfe,  
19 I wanted to ask about here: In the - and I know you've  
20 seen the outline - in the outline, there is an item  
21 referred to "November 1968, racket exposed relating to  
22 the listing of thirteen people" personally declared Fair  
23 Game by Mr. Hubbard.

24 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes.

1 MR. SHOEMAKER: Would you explain that a little  
2 bit, what was involved in that and what that meant?

3 MR. DeWOLFE: That meant exactly what it said.  
4 Well, it was written -- well, it wasn't written up,  
5 and I wasn't in Scientology at this particular time in  
6 '63, having left in '59. This is the same sort of thing  
7 that we would write out.

8 The Fair Game Policy in the fifties was something  
9 which was very verbal. One thing I -- maybe -- a point  
10 I'd like to make here very quickly is that there are  
11 two concurrent lives of L. Ron Hubbard going on at the  
12 same time. You have the super-secret hidden, private  
13 life of L. Ron Hubbard, which very few people knew,  
14 and which is now, probably, as we go along through time  
15 here -- will be discovered more of, because now that,  
16 I guess, I talked, maybe other people will feel it's safe  
17 to talk.

18 The -- so, all of this was all verbal. And, of  
19 course, he didn't have the power base he had in the  
20 fifties that he had later. So, it was kind of a secret  
21 thing. But this is precisely -- as you read it, it's  
22 exactly what was meant. It was not -- it was not done  
23 as an empty, hollow threat. And this means you were cut  
24 off from all people; if we could do something to you, we

1 did.

2 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mr. DeWolfe - and this will be my  
3 last question - I know this is a difficult one to try  
4 to answer, but I think it should be asked.

5 Obviously, you're under a great deal of duress to  
6 come here and to testify at this --

7 MR. DeWOLFE: No, I'm not under duress, sir.

8 MR. SHOEMAKER: Well, I didn't -- that's the  
9 wrong word. I mean, you've got a lot of -- you had to  
10 have had a lot of trauma --

11 MR. DeWOLFE: I would have walked here on my hands  
12 and knees.

13 MR. SHOEMAKER: I guess my question is why? That's  
14 what I'm getting down to.

15 MR. DeWOLFE: As I said, I happened to have  
16 acquired a rather strong like for constitutionality,  
17 laws, truth, and fact over the years. It's a very funny  
18 thing; I don't know how to explain the mechanism. Maybe  
19 somebody else can.

20 But I spent years having no real, honest, commonly  
21 understood ethics or legality. And the laws were some-  
22 thing to be used; they were a weapon. A court or any-  
23 thing else was used as a sledgehammer. I didn't have  
24 any of those. They didn't mean anything to me; life

1 didn't mean anything to me. It wasn't something to be  
2 loved and cherished and nurtured. It was -- people were  
3 robots to me; people were nothing but raw meat. And  
4 over the years, I've suddenly started getting my head  
5 sorted out.

6 It wasn't until 1978, late 1978, that the last  
7 vestiges of all of the Scientology nonsense and Hubbard  
8 nonsense got out of my skull. But there's nothing worse  
9 than, say, a sinner who has become a preacher, because  
10 he knows every in and out of the whole thing. He believes  
11 in these things, and he -- everybody like you -- so many  
12 people like you, they take the constitution simply for  
13 granted because, as kids, it was just there. And there  
14 was -- too many people take too much for granted. But,  
15 as I said, I don't take any of that for granted, and  
16 that's why I'm here.

17 I think -- and again, I think I'm, considering  
18 myself personally -- my being here all not -- not all  
19 that totally necessary. And so, that's why I'm here,  
20 just to help it out.

21 I've always tried to be -- one of the things my  
22 father taught me - I still follow some of these rules -  
23 which is try to be effective and efficient. And so, this  
24 is a good forum to say all these things that I haven't

1           been able to get out. And I've tried for years to try to  
2           say things to people to try to tell them, and they laughed  
3           at me a great deal because they think that some of the  
4           things I say are as a far out as my father's science  
5           fiction.

6           MR. SHOEMAKER: Mr. DeWolfe, just one other ques-  
7           tion: At the time you were in the Church of Scientology,  
8           did they have the Guardian's Office?

9           MR. DeWOLFE: No.

10          MR. SHOEMAKER: Did they have any --

11          MR. DeWOLFE: It was a do-it-yourself organization.  
12          I mean, we didn't have a complete department called the  
13          Guardian's Office. It was done by L. Ron Hubbard, by  
14          Mary Sue. It wasn't -- as I said, it wasn't something  
15          that was hung up there on the org. board.

16          MR. SHOEMAKER: When you say "it," what do you  
17          mean by it?

18          MR. DeWOLFE: The Guardian's Office. We, you  
19          know --

20          MR. SHOEMAKER: Yes, sir. But what was done by  
21          Mr. Hubbard and Mrs. Hubbard that the Guardian's Office  
22          does now?

23          MR. DeWOLFE: The same things. What I'm trying to  
24          say -- do you mean, specific incidents?



1 MR. SHOEMAKER: No, I accept that. What was being  
2 done then that you can relate to what is being done now  
3 by the Guardian's Office?

4 MR. DeWOLFE: The -- well, there's something  
5 referred to earlier, just rapid expose -- the attacking  
6 of any enemies of Scientology, the pumping out of this  
7 information, the Guardian's -- the protection of Scien-  
8 tology, the protection of the organization itself.

9 MR. SHOEMAKER: I want to ask --

10 MR. DeWOLFE: That's another -- any Scientology  
11 organization to me is called organization.

12 MR. SHOEMAKER: I don't mean to put words into  
13 your mouth, but what you're saying -- are you saying  
14 that these are the same types of practices, whether  
15 legal or illegal, that were done then --

16 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes.

17 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- to protect the organization?

18 MR. DeWOLFE: That's correct.

19 MR. SHOEMAKER: Thank you.

20 MR. LeCHER: Two quick ones: You have said that  
21 your entire youth was spent in Scientology in the planning  
22 stage: formulating, writing, plotting, along with  
23 your father who was the Founder.

24 With all this study and all this planning and all

1           this effort, has it left you with any marketable skills  
2           at age forty-eight?

3           MR. DeWOLFE: Marketable skills?

4           MR. LeCHER: Has it prepared you for a job after  
5           Scientology?

6           MR. DeWOLFE: No. I didn't know what to do. I've  
7           held probably a couple of dozen jobs at least over the  
8           years.

9           I didn't have any skills that -- what you would  
10          call marketable skills, so I had to learn them. I had  
11          to learn how to work. It's incredibly difficult to --  
12          in the very beginning like that to try and get back into  
13          some kind of routine and work nine to five. I wasn't  
14          used to receiving a paycheck or even how to earn a pay-  
15          check. But it took me quite a number of years.

16          After all, you know, with six children, you better  
17          get something or you're passed.

18          MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

19          One other question: Do you -- can you tell me  
20          everything -- tell me something about radiation?

21          MR. DeWOLFE: Yes.

22          I find this kind of funny, I know that many people  
23          don't, but I happen to have a thirty-two-year view of  
24          the thing. There's a book called All About Radiation

1       that came out in the mid-fifties. And at the same time,  
2       he came out with a product -- we sold a product which  
3       was vitamins and minerals called Dianazene. And the  
4       Dianazene had huge amounts of niacin in it, nicotinic  
5       acid.

6       The processes and the -- accompanying the book,  
7       All About Radiation, and the Dianazene -- its purpose --  
8       its stated purpose to the membership and to the public  
9       was "We now have the ability to erradicate or" - in  
10      Scientology terms - "run out all of your old tracks or  
11      past-track radiation experiences." That means that all  
12      of the space-opera wars you were into where they set off  
13      H-bombs seventy-four trillion years ago and all that,  
14      that these processes have this product called Dianazene,  
15      which was, simply, as I said, vitamins and minerals with huge  
16      amounts of niacin in it, which would produce these wild  
17      flushes.

18      Now, if you take a great deal of niacin, you get  
19      these incredible flushes, like a rash. You get hot,  
20      flush, your body would turn red in spots or over the  
21      whole thing. And this was proof -- this was proof that  
22      you were running out or erradicating all of your entire  
23      space-opera, old-track radiation. And -- and the  
24      Dianazene and following the directions in the book made

1           you -- guaranteed you proof against any radiation.  
2           That means, if somebody dropped an H-bomb today and you  
3           followed all of that, that you were proofed against  
4           radiation; it wouldn't hurt you.

5           And -- so, that is, I think, one of the major --  
6           one of the major frauds in the mid-fifties concerning  
7           Scientology is about the radiation. All it does is -- it  
8           was niacin.

9           MR. LeCHER: I have two quick ones the attorney  
10          would like me to ask.

11          How was the money carried out of the country?  
12          And in the organization, was it Hubbard's - excuse me -  
13          policy to have all the writings bear his name?

14          MR. DeWOLFE: Yes. He was Source. That must have  
15          been repeated fifty million times. "L. Ron Hubbard is  
16          Source. L. Ron Hubbard is Founder. L. Ron Hubbard is  
17          Creator." It is his game. "It is my game," he would  
18          say. "This is mine; it belongs to me." And everything  
19          that was written by anybody else -- and there are many  
20          little bits and pieces that were written by other people,  
21          and many of the processes and training drills and et  
22          cetera that were written and invented and created by  
23          other people -- but at all times it was L. Ron Hubbard.  
24          That was the only name attached to it. Even if we wrote

1 policy letters and he would review them and, then, put  
2 his name on it. So, everything was -- that was his --  
3 one of his first, basic, standard orders at that time.

4 MR. LeCHER: How was the money taken out of the  
5 country?

6 MR. DeWOLFE: There were several ways of doing it.  
7 The very first one that I know of was in late 1952, when  
8 he went to London where Diane was born, September 24th,  
9 he opened up, through permission of the Bank of England,  
10 what is called in England a Dollar Account. That means  
11 that it was a special account that you could put in and  
12 take out dollars.

13 MR. LeCHER: Was that carried out in a shoebox or --

14 MR. DeWOLFE: Yeah. Well, they were carried out  
15 in checks; they were carried out in shoeboxes. I took  
16 a valise over one time, as I said, full of money that  
17 went into the account.

18 Now, while other people may -- apparently, have  
19 been signatories and directors of other U.S. corporations,  
20 the only one that could sign on the Dollar Account was  
21 L. Ron Hubbard. So that this was a way in the early  
22 fifties for the money to be siphoned out of the various  
23 organizations in the United States to England. And  
24 once it was there, he had absolute and total freedom to

1 use it because of the nature of the account and the fact  
2 that he was the signatory on it.

3 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

4 Mr. Calderbank, do you have some questions?

5 MR. CALDERBANK: Yes.

6 Mr. DeWolfe, during the time that you were with  
7 your father from '48 up until '59, would you describe  
8 yourself as probably his closest person? Or were you,  
9 as his son and as a, would you say, co-founder in the  
10 various Dianetics and Scientology teachings --

11 MR. DeWOLFE: I would say I was very close, but  
12 I was not a co-founder. But -- there is only one  
13 Founder.

14 But as far as being close is concerned, yes. It  
15 was not from '48, though. It would have to be from the  
16 summer of '52 is when it was incredibly close. Of  
17 course --

18 MR. CALDERBANK: You were his right-hand man and  
19 knew your father probably better than anyone else?

20 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes, that and Mary Sue. We were  
21 probably the closest workwise and even, as I said, living  
22 together in many different areas of the country.

23 MR. CALDERBANK: You said you weren't co-founder,  
24 but all during your testimony you said that --

1 MR. DeWOLFE: Well, that's a very special term.

2 MR. CALDERBANK: Many of the -- correct. But  
3 many of the --

4 MR. DeWOLFE: I did a lot of the things, but, as  
5 I said, just answering your questions, the name of L.  
6 Ron Hubbard is on it.

7 MR. CALDERBANK: Right.

8 But why -- if many of the policies and ideas were  
9 yours and you came up with them, why are they all copy-  
10 righted to L. Ron Hubbard?

11 MR. DeWOLFE: Because he owns them. What I mean is:  
12 There's only one Source, one Founder. He always insisted  
13 on that, that regardless of whatever was done was him.  
14 And it really didn't make an awful lot of difference to  
15 me. If you look at it within the context of the time,  
16 it was rather immaterial to me.

17 MR. CALDERBANK: During Dianetics, the era of  
18 Dianetics, prior to it becoming the Church of Scientology,  
19 was auditing then the -- a major money producer?

20 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: And --

22 MR. DeWOLFE: That and Dianetic courses.

23 MR. CALDERBANK: Then, in '53, it was changed to  
24 Scientology, and you went from Dianetic auditing to

1           Scientology auditing?

2           MR. DeWOLFE: Yes.

3           MR. CALDERBANK: What was the --

4           MR. DeWOLFE: Well, actually, Scientology auditing  
5 started or occurred, as I said, in the summer of 1952  
6 when he could no longer do anything with Dianetics  
7 again. That's where it started to become Scientology;  
8 it would be the summer of 1952 in Phoenix, Arizona.

9           MR. CALDERBANK: And my question is: The Dianetics  
10 auditing was guaranteed? It was scientific research,  
11 et cetera, et cetera?

12          MR. DeWOLFE: That's correct.

13          MR. CALDERBANK: What was the difference between  
14 Scientology auditing and Dianetic auditing --

15          MR. DeWOLFE: Nothing at all --

16          MR. CALDERBANK: -- in the beginning?

17          MR. DeWOLFE: -- except I would say the greater  
18 increasing emphasis on space opera.

19          MR. CALDERBANK: Back in the Dianetics era, were --  
20 was your father using the confidential information to  
21 have people pay up for their courses?

22          MR. DeWOLFE: Yes. If people didn't pay, that was  
23 a fairly actionable offense, according to Dad.

24          MR. CALDERBANK: And he told them then, also, that



1 it was in confidence that the auditing was taken?

2 MR. DeWOLFE: Oh, yes.

3 MR. CALDERBANK: And he utilized it?

4 MR. DeWOLFE: If you had a copy of the Auditor's  
5 Code, that Auditor's Code is virtually the same.

6 MR. CALDERBANK: The main -- I guess the main  
7 reason that I see for you coming here is: We've heard  
8 testimony that many of the -- or, at least, one person  
9 spent up to \$35 or \$40,000.00 in the belief that your  
10 father was a nuclear physicist, et cetera.

11 On what do you base your knowledge that he was  
12 none of these?

13 MR. DeWOLFE: By conversations with him and by  
14 conversations with my grandfather, my mother, my grand-  
15 mother, other family members. Actually, our family,  
16 if you wanted to spread it out a little bit, is pretty  
17 well all over the United States. Plus, I have seen a  
18 variety of documents over the years, both his and others  
19 obtained.

20 For instance, not being a nuclear physicist -- I've  
21 seen his transcript a long time ago, many years ago.

22 MR. CALDERBANK: And in addition to auditing, when  
23 it was used as a Dianetics procedure, what guarantees  
24 were given then, the same that are given now? In

1           Scientology, it was guaranteed as a science to relieve  
2           and cure various cancers, various ailments.

3           MR. DeWOLFE: That's correct.

4           Of course, some of the terminology changed, but  
5           I'm talking about actual -- de facto.

6           MR. CALDERBANK: During this time, did auditing or  
7           Dianetics ever pay taxes in the fifties when this was  
8           being used?

9           MR. DeWOLFE: If we did, we should have fought it.  
10          No, I don't think so.

11          MR. CALDERBANK: And a statement on the -- recentl  
12          in the media, Reverend Wilhere, I believe -- well,  
13          Reverend Wilhere said that your father's, again, spent  
14          years and years of research in this auditing, and it's  
15          based on case histories and years of research.

16          Just to sum it up, you're saying that none of  
17          this research existed: there's no data, no case  
18          histories? And, as the person that knew your father  
19          the best during the evolution of Dianetics and Scien-  
20          tology are sitting here and saying that what he's  
21          printed in books and what has brought many people to  
22          pay for it into Clearwater is untrue?

23          MR. DeWOLFE: That's correct.

24          MR. CALDERBANK: No more questions.

1 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Berfield.

2 MR. BERFIELD: Mr. DeWolfe, if I understood your  
3 earlier testimony yesterday, the allegations or state-  
4 ments as to your father's education, you answered "No"  
5 to most of those; is that correct?

6 MR. DeWOLFE: I'm sorry, sir, I can't hear you.

7 MR. BERFIELD: Yesterday, a list of schools and  
8 studies that your father had undertaken, you answered  
9 "No" to them. And if I could read for you -- it's a  
10 book called Dianetics, on page 138. It refers to your  
11 father having studied science and mathematics at  
12 George Washington University, graduating from Columbia  
13 College, attending Princeton University, and attaining  
14 a degree as Philosophy -- Doctor of Philosophy from  
15 Sequoia University.

16 Your answer was "No" to each of those; is that  
17 correct?

18 MR. DeWOLFE: The -- it was "No" to the point of  
19 Sequoia University. As I explained yesterday, Sequoia  
20 University was a diploma mill and you just wrote to them.

21 MR. BERFIELD: And Mr. Calderbank just got through  
22 asking you about another one, All About Radiation. On  
23 the flyleaf of it, it makes reference to "L. Ron Hubbard,  
24 one of America's first nuclear physicists."

1                   What --

2                   MR. DeWOLFE: That's not true.

3                   MR. BERFIELD: All of these would be lying in --  
4 with the exception of Doctor of Philosophy?

5                   MR. DeWOLFE: That's correct.

6                   MR. BERFIELD: So, if I relied upon his ability  
7 to render service to me based upon this, that would be  
8 a falsehood; is that correct?

9                   MR. DeWOLFE: Correct.

10                  MR. BERFIELD: In other words, it would be more  
11 or less a fraud upon the public; is that correct?

12                  MR. DeWOLFE: Correct.

13                  MR. BERFIELD: Let me ask you a few other questions  
14 here.

15                  Now, like Mr. Hatchett said, your story here sounds  
16 so interesting; it sounds almost like Howard Hughes.

17                  MR. DeWOLFE: That's a very close analogy there,  
18 believe me.

19                  MR. BERFIELD: Have you ever testified before any  
20 other groups, any governmental agencies or groups similar  
21 to this, legislative groups?

22                  MR. DeWOLFE: No, I haven't, sir. I just testified  
23 for the IRS in the sixties. I don't have the date, but  
24 it was --

1 MR. BERFIELD: I was trying to find it here, and  
2 I cannot confront you with it, but somewhere that you  
3 had given or sworn an oath or testimony and then reneged  
4 on it; is that correct?

5 MR. DeWOLFE: That's correct. Yes, that's correct.

6 That's -- I was talking about 1971, '72. That's  
7 where I had signed a statement which, at the time, I  
8 did not believe. But anyhow, that was that.

9 I didn't feel -- in my own mind, I didn't feel  
10 that I was able to recant something I had put under oath  
11 without the recant itself being equality under the law,  
12 and it wasn't equal under the law, as far as I was  
13 concerned - the recant.

14 MR. BERFIELD: All right.

15 What I'm trying to get in my mind is: If you  
16 testified under oath before, what assurance do we have  
17 that you're not going to recant on this? Was there  
18 some undue pressure --

19 MR. DeWOLFE: I'm not going --

20 MR. BERFIELD: -- put on you or something?

21 MR. DeWOLFE: Huh?

22 MR. BERFIELD: Was there undue pressure put on you  
23 or something that caused you to recant that?

24 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes.

1 MR. BERFIELD: Can you tell us about it?

2 MR. DeWOLFE: Well, I was trying, as I said, to  
3 explain that earlier, just before the break. But the --  
4 what I had -- the testimony -- the testimony that I  
5 supposedly recanted -- or the recant statement that I  
6 made was a very generalized statement, as I remember.

7 The testimony that I gave in the IRS case, in  
8 general, was nothing more -- was pretty well confined  
9 to a very limited space in time of the organization,  
10 insofar as its financial dealings were concerned, and --  
11 like, for instance, how much money I had received and  
12 how much money that, during a certain time period, I  
13 knew that the Church had received. So, that's about  
14 what I remember of it.

15 MR. BERFIELD: I guess it's still not clear in my  
16 mind. Was there any pressure put on you to rescind or  
17 recant or withdraw --

18 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes.

19 At the time, as I said, in 1971, 1972, it was a  
20 very traumatic experience. I was not really in a position  
21 to -- I was not really in a position to defend myself  
22 or -- at that time, Scientology was very, very strong  
23 and, also, my children were very small.

24 One of the reasons I'm here today is that five of

1 my six children are up and on their own, and they're  
2 very well able to take care of themselves. There is  
3 enough of what I have said already available to the  
4 press and to government and other kinds of people, so that  
5 it would be absolutely useless to try to do anything  
6 against me or force me to try to say something different  
7 or recant.

8 MR. BERFIELD: Let me go a step further. Are you  
9 saying that there was duress or some undue influence  
10 that they put upon you at that time?

11 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes.

12 MR. BERFIELD: Is that, basically, just the children  
13 that you were talking about earlier?

14 MR. DeWOLFE: Well, I was worried about myself and  
15 my wife, too.

16 MR. BERFIELD: What, other than the photograph,  
17 did they do to --

18 MR. DeWOLFE: Phone calls in the night. I would  
19 actually have to sit down and remember all of -- it was  
20 really quite a confused mess at the time.

21 And you really have a proper question there: Will  
22 I recant in the future? I'd have to say, absolutely not.

23 MR. BERFIELD: All right.

24 Thus far, you've been talking about the period up

1 to '59, early '60, and you did testify based upon first-  
2 hand experience. But since that period of time, have  
3 you had any contact with Scientologists?

4 MR. DeWOLFE: I've had off and on contact with  
5 people that were -- had been in Scientology or in and  
6 around the whole subject matter. But insofar as this  
7 direct observation within the organization or anything  
8 else, of course not, no.

9 MR. BERFIELD: So, you really couldn't say whether  
10 the criminal activities or some of these other training  
11 activities were continuing; is that correct?

12 MR. DeWOLFE: As to direct, personal knowledge,  
13 no.

14 MR. BERFIELD: There are a couple of other things  
15 here that I'm not too sure about.

16 I believe you testified that you were using drugs  
17 or high on drugs when you wrote, I can't remember, one  
18 of the books, whether it was Beginning of Man or whether  
19 it was -- one of them.

20 Do you use drugs?

21 MR. DeWOLFE: Do I use drugs?

22 MR. BERFIELD: Yes.

23 MR. DeWOLFE: No.

24 I use, of course, prescription stuff. But -- no,



1 I quit all of that when I left.

2 MR. BERFIELD: At the time you were in the Church,  
3 you said that your father was totally in charge.

4 MR. DeWOLFE: I'm sorry, I didn't hear the --

5 MR. BERFIELD: During the period of time that you  
6 were associated with Scientologists, you said that your  
7 father was totally in charge.

8 MR. DeWOLFE: That's correct.

9 MR. BERFIELD: Could you testify, to the best of  
10 your opinion, whether he still is in complete control of  
11 the Church or Scientology?

12 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes, assuming he's alive.

13 MR. BERFIELD: Why do you say that?

14 MR. DeWOLFE: Well, I really don't know. In the  
15 many, many years and experiences of being around him --  
16 he said that he resigned in 1966, but that was a paper  
17 shuffle. As far as -- he was so focused on being in  
18 absolute and full control at all times that I just cannot  
19 see him ever changing that.

20 MR. BERFIELD: Now, I also understand you to say  
21 that this book here was -- really was not in your  
22 father's possession at all times, is that correct, that  
23 someone else had copyrights or something to it? It's  
24 Dianetics.

1 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes. That was the Dianetic Research  
2 Foundation, Don G. Purcell, correct.

3 MR. BERFIELD: A personal question --

4 MR. DeWOLFE: Oh, not that particular book, I'm  
5 sorry. Is it Dianetics: Evolution of Science -- is  
6 that -- Dianetics: The Modern Science of Mental Health  
7 is the one I'm referring to.

8 MR. BERFIELD: From your own personal knowledge,  
9 has Scientology ever helped you with any of your  
10 illnesses or sicknesses?

11 MR. DeWOLFE: No.

12 MR. BERFIELD: If you -- if I --

13 MR. DeWOLFE: I learned I had to wear glasses  
14 since I was twelve. And during Scientology, he wouldn't  
15 let me wear them, so I had migraine headaches. But  
16 after I learned that they wouldn't handle that, I wore  
17 them.

18 MR. BERFIELD: I believe this question's been  
19 asked earlier but: Are you aware of anybody that has  
20 been cured by Scientology?

21 MR. DeWOLFE: No.

22 MR. BERFIELD: As a layman - and this is very  
23 hard for you to do, but take yourself out and just go  
24 into Scientology to begin with - would you believe the

1 information that's in this book?

2 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes.

3 MR. BERFIELD: Knowing what you do know about  
4 Scientology and what has been alleged about Mr. Hubbard  
5 and what he can do for you, would you believe what's in  
6 this book?

7 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes.

8 MR. BERFIELD: You would believe what's in this  
9 book?

10 MR. DeWOLFE: If I was from the outside --

11 MR. BERFIELD: No, no. Knowing -- excuse me.

12 I'll repeat the question. Knowing what you now  
13 know about Scientology --

14 MR. DeWOLFE: Oh, sorry. No.

15 MR. BERFIELD: -- would you believe that they could  
16 cure your illnesses and --

17 MR. DeWOLFE: Knowing what I know?

18 MR. BERFIELD: Knowing what you know.

19 MR. DeWOLFE: No, they couldn't.

20 MR. BERFIELD: One other thing - and I may be on  
21 touchy ground here but - during the period of the fifties  
22 when there was so much conversation about the E-Meter,  
23 why the vacillation back and forth about using the E-  
24 Meter? It either was important or it wasn't important.

1 MR. DeWOLFE: It was very important, but it was  
2 a matter of ownership.

3 The -- Bob Mathieson and my father couldn't come  
4 to terms as to the continued use of the E-Meter in 1951  
5 and '52. And then, my father, since he could not control  
6 totally the E-Meter or come to terms, quit using it and  
7 invented processes which didn't require the E-Meter until  
8 later on, as I mentioned earlier, about Don Green and  
9 Joe Wallace created one in Washington, D.C. in the mid-  
10 fifties.

11 But that's the vacillation. Simply, it was based  
12 on ownership and control.

13 MR. BERFIELD: Just two last questions here -  
14 and I'm not trying to put words in your mouth but - if  
15 I understood you correctly, it is your testimony that  
16 your father still sets corporate policy for Scientology?

17 MR. DeWOLFE: I would have to say yes, just  
18 simply because of the long term, having experience with  
19 him.

20 MR. BERFIELD: It -- this question really may have  
21 been said, too, but this one follows along that line.

22 In your estimation, if somebody violated that cor-  
23 porate policy, would there be any punishment?

24 MR. DeWOLFE: I would say yes. He would control

1 things, yes.

2 MR. BERFIELD: Then, I come back to put the last  
3 nail in the coffin: This book or any other book - this  
4 one on All About Radiation - how would you describe  
5 that as far as the public is concerned?

6 MR. DeWOLFE: I don't know from what -- quite  
7 what you mean.

8 MR. BERFIELD: Would you say that it's a factual  
9 book that they could rely upon or fraud or what?

10 MR. DeWOLFE: No. It's a complete fraud. There's  
11 not a thing in there that is workable.

12 MR. BERFIELD: If this book was being sold in  
13 Clearwater, if I understand your testimony, this is  
14 something that would be a fraud upon the people of  
15 Clearwater; is that correct?

16 MR. DeWOLFE: Well, yes. It is guaranteeing that  
17 it's going to rid you of radiation or make you radiation  
18 proof, and that's a scientific impossibility as we know  
19 it today.

20 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

21 Mrs. Garvey, would you like to ask some questions?

22 MRS. GARVEY: Just some clarification on the use  
23 of the E-Meter: The Dianetic Research Institute was  
24 set up as a scientific research institute? The Dianetic

1           Research Institute was what? Was it a scientific  
2           research institute?

3           MR. DeWOLFE: No. The Dianetic Research -- the  
4           Dianetic Research Foundation was set up ostensibly for  
5           research, but it was more or less a place where people  
6           could come to train to be an auditor. It's the same  
7           as a mission today or what we called them, centers,  
8           where you were trained and you received auditing.

9           MRS. GARVEY: But it was not -- it was not intended  
10          to be a religious institute at all?

11          MR. DeWOLFE: None whatsoever.

12          MRS. GARVEY: Nothing -- there was no religion  
13          attached to it. They just -- but the exact same E-Meter  
14          and auditor is now being used for -- by a religious  
15          institute?

16          MR. DeWOLFE: Yes. Of course, there are different  
17          models over the years.

18          MRS. GARVEY: Right.

19          But it's the same basic concept?

20          MR. DeWOLFE: Yes, correct.

21          MRS. GARVEY: One of the things that Mr. Walters  
22          told us earlier is the reason people are joining or  
23          going in with Scientology is because of the fantastic  
24          background of Mr. Hubbard, you know, he's a nuclear

1 physicist, you know, all the really great things that he  
2 has done.

3 Why did the people join in 1950 or '51, '52, '53?

4 MR. DeWOLFE: The same -- the same basic reasons.  
5 The same self-created mystique, the same biographical  
6 data created by him. Plus, you must realize that you  
7 can be -- there's that old thing of being able to do  
8 anything, being completely free, having total and com-  
9 plete power over yourself. And you have that promise  
10 of be what you want to be, fly through space, and be  
11 completely free of your subconscious mind.

12 MRS. GARVEY: So, what you're saying is when he  
13 wrote the first book, Dianetics, he used that background  
14 then?

15 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes.

16 MRS. GARVEY: Before you left, were any of these  
17 policies that you talked about that weren't written, were  
18 any of those written by the time you left in '59 or  
19 were they still unwritten policies?

20 MR. DeWOLFE: Well, on that aspect, I can't recall  
21 if --

22 MRS. GARVEY: Okay.

23 MR. DeWOLFE: -- they -- they may have been written  
24 in different forms and different -- slightly different

1 words. I would really have to review it.

2 Please keep in mind that I've heard enough, I guess,  
3 during the fifties to pack into ten or twenty lifetimes.  
4 And so, you're dealing, also, with, you know, maybe a  
5 few hundred million words.

6 MRS. GARVEY: You just can't remember whether or  
7 not there was anything written?

8 MR. DeWOLFE: Anything really specific about it.

9 MRS. GARVEY: Thank you.

10 MR. DeWOLFE: I mean, as it was described in books.

11 MRS. GARVEY: Oh, one last thing: Hubbard  
12 supposedly claims that all -- that the Church is owing him  
13 millions of dollars because of all the research that  
14 he has done for Scientology. Is that true? Is that what  
15 he --

16 MR. DeWOLFE: He did that as a business ploy and  
17 as a tax ploy, that he was owed all of this money and  
18 he never made anything, quote, unquote, was the public-  
19 type of statement that he made about that.

20 MRS. GARVEY: But obviously, if he didn't do any  
21 research --

22 MR. DeWOLFE: That kept increasing. That kept  
23 increasing to -- well, he'd walk in and say, "Well, the  
24 Church owes me \$100,000.00." But it got up to thirteen



1 million. It started out as one or two million.

2 MRS. GARVEY: But you're -- but what you're saying  
3 is that he, in fact, did not do any research, so nothing  
4 is owed to him?

5 MR. DeWOLFE: That's correct.

6 MR. LeCHER: If you had to sum up your testimony  
7 given to us today, what message would you like to leave  
8 with this Commission?

9 MR. DeWOLFE: Wow.

10 I think the message I would leave with you is to  
11 stay the hell out of hell.

12 MR. LeCHER: Stay the hell out of hell.

13 Thank you.

14 MR. FLYNN: Mayor, I now have some documents that  
15 I'd like to introduce.

16 MR. LeCHER: I'd like the witness to stay here.  
17 He may be able to help us with the documents or if we  
18 want to question him about any of the documents.

19 Then, we'll get on to the next witness.

20 MR. FLYNN: I believe we're up to Exhibit 20; is  
21 that correct?

22 MRS. WILLIAMS: Correct.

23 MR. FLYNN: Exhibit 20 - if we could place it on  
24 the projector - is a transcript of the grades of

1 Lafayette Ronald Hubbard from the George Washington  
2 University.

3 (A copy of a transcript from George  
4 Washington University was marked as  
Exhibit No. 20, as of this date.)

5 MR. GREENE: This exhibit shows that Mr. Hubbard  
6 completed three semesters at George Washington University.  
7 I'd like to direct your attention to --

8 MR. LeCHER: Can you get it off the ceiling?

9 MR. SHOEMAKER: Oh, I'm sorry.

10 MR. GREENE: I might direct your attention to the  
11 last entry in the left-hand column: In Nuclear and  
12 Atomic Physics, Hubbard received an F.

13 The faculty took action, which is indicated in the  
14 lower right-hand corner of the exhibit, if you could move  
15 it up on the screen. Mr. Hubbard was on probation when  
16 he returned in September of 1931.

17 Again, directing your attention to the left-hand  
18 column, in Mathematics/Calculus, Hubbard received an  
19 F.

20 MR. CALDERBANK: Was there any Physics or any  
21 other complex science on the document? Did he take any  
22 courses --

23 MR. GREENE: The document speaks for itself, Mr.  
24 Calderbank.

1           The -- it appears that I pointed out physics  
2           courses, that course that he took that he received an  
3           F in. He had a mathematics course above that that he  
4           received an F in.

5           MR. FLYNN: May the record reflect that the  
6           exhibit indicates that there were one -- two Ds, three  
7           Fs. And three semesters would be a year and-a-half.

8           The next exhibit, number 21, is a Navy biographical  
9           outline of Mr. Hubbard's naval career.

10                       (A copy of a biographical outline  
11                       from the U.S. Navy was marked as  
                      Exhibit No. 21, as of this date.)

12           MR. FLYNN: Mr. Greene will indicate relevant  
13           portions of it.

14           MR. GREENE: This was an Information Request sub-  
15           mitted to the Department of the Navy. It indicates on  
16           page one his ships and station in the lower left-hand  
17           corner of the page, that station being in Washington,  
18           D.C.

19           And if you trace through on page two of the exhibit,  
20           the ships and station, you'll see Mr. Hubbard spent  
21           approximately sixteen weeks in Melbourne, Australia. That  
22           appears as the third entry down from the top of the page.

23           Aside from that foreign duty, his entire involvement  
24           with the Navy -- he was stationed, as station or a ship,

1 here in the United States: New York, Oregon, California,  
2 New Jersey.

3 On the lower part of that page, you'll see that  
4 he attended the Naval Training School at Princeton, New  
5 Jersey.

6 Just below that, you'll see an entry for the Naval  
7 Hospital, Oak Knoll, California for a period of time:  
8 September '45 through December '45, December 4, '45.

9 MR. CALDERBANK: To sum up the document, how much  
10 time does this document show that he actually spent in  
11 active duty/combat during the World War II time span?

12 MR. FLYNN: The document indicates that he didn't  
13 spend any time in any combat and, in fact, he never  
14 received any war wounds in any type of combat.

15 The next document is a Ship's Log of a ship that  
16 Mr. Hubbard served on, which is going to be marked as  
17 Exhibit No. 22.

18 (A copy of a Ship's Log was marked  
19 as Exhibit No. 22, as of this  
date.)

20 MR. GREENE: This is a confidential log. You'll  
21 see it appears at the top of the left-hand corner of the  
22 page. The ship's name was the ALGOL, A-L-G-O-L.

23 I'd like to direct your attention to the entry at  
24 16:30, the left-hand column toward the bottom of the page,

1 that last paragraph, which reads as follows: "The navi-  
2 gating officer reported to the OOD that an attempt at  
3 sabotage had been made sometime between 15:30 through  
4 16:00. A coke bottle filled with gasoline with a cloth  
5 wick inserted had been concealed along cargo. It was to  
6 be hoisted aboard and stowed in Number One Hold. It was  
7 discovered before being taken aboard. ONI, FDI, NSD  
8 authorities reported on the scene and investigations were  
9 started."

10 In the lower right-hand corner of the page appears  
11 Mr. Hubbard's signature as the navigator, the navigating  
12 officer.

13 Page two of that exhibit -- if you raise that  
14 exhibit, you'll see it in the lower right-hand corner  
15 of the page. If you look, you'll see Mr. Hubbard's sig-  
16 nature there as the navigator.

17 Page two of that exhibit, could we have that placed  
18 on the overhead projector? There'll be the date in the  
19 upper right-hand corner, Thursday, September 28th, 1944.  
20 It's the following day, and I'd like to direct your  
21 attention to the entry 16:20, last paragraph on the page.

22 "Orders before 16:35 pursuant to DuPers dispatch  
23 dated 27 September at 22:144. Lieutenant Lafayette Ron  
24 Hubbard D/BS, USNR 113392 was this date detached from

1 duties aboard this vessel. He transferred from  
2 present duty under instruction to the University of  
3 Princeton, New Jersey.

4 "19:40: 32nd unit U.S. Naval Construction  
5 Battalion returned aboard to resume loading."

6 MR. LeCHER: Why is it significant about the coke  
7 bottle, the wick, and the return to Princeton?

8 MR. FLYNN: Mr. Hubbard -- the ALGOL sailed into  
9 combat approximately three days after this event, and  
10 it received its orders to go into combat sometime before  
11 that, which Mr. Hubbard was aware of. And Mr. Hubbard is  
12 the one who found the coke bottle and, just before the  
13 ship went into combat, he was relieved of duty.

14 MR. LeCHER: All right. Thank you.

15 MR. FLYNN: And as the record will indicate, shortly  
16 after that, he went to the Oak Knoll Military Hospital.

17 MR. LeCHER: Yes, sir.

18 MR. BERFIELD: Just one question: Do you have  
19 anything there to validate that the two are connected?

20 MR. FLYNN: We don't have -- we don't have any  
21 evidence to validate who placed the coke bottle. We have  
22 evidence to validate that the ship went into combat. We  
23 have evidence, as you've just seen, to validate that Mr.  
24 Hubbard was relieved from duty within twenty-four hours

1 after the coke bottle was found by him, as you have just  
2 seen.

3 The next exhibit, number 23, is a letter of October  
4 16th from Mr. Hubbard to the Veteran's Administration.

5 (A copy of a letter to the Veteran's  
6 Administration was marked as Exhibit  
No. 23, as of this date.)

7 MR. GREENE: This letter is dated October 16,  
8 1947 from Lafayette Ronald Hubbard: "Gentlemen" -  
9 directed to the Veteran's Administration - "This is a  
10 request for treatment. My residence is north of Holly-  
11 wood, but I attend school at Drama Theater Workshop,  
12 Fairfax and Wilshire, Los Angeles. It would be appreci-  
13 ated if any out physician selected would be located near  
14 my school, as I have a vacant hour and-a-half from one  
15 to two-thirty four days each week at school. I work at  
16 night six days per week.

17 "I was placed on a certain medication back East  
18 and have continued it at my own expense. After trying  
19 and failing for two years to regain my equilibrium in  
20 civil life, I am utterly unable to approach anything  
21 like my own competence. My last physician informed me  
22 that it might be very helpful if I were to be examined  
23 and, perhaps, treated psychiatrically or even by a psycho-  
24 analyst.

1 "Toward the end of my service, I avoided out of  
2 pride any mental examinations, hoping that time would  
3 balance a mind, which I had every reason to suppose  
4 was seriously affected. I cannot account for nor rise  
5 above long periods of moroseness and suicidal inclina-  
6 tions, and have nearly come to realize that I must first  
7 triumph above this before I can hope to rehabilitate  
8 myself at all.

9 "I cannot leave school or what little work I am  
10 doing for hospitalization due to many obligations, but  
11 I feel I might be treated outside possibly with success.  
12 I cannot myself afford such treatment. Would you please  
13 help me?

14 "Sincerely, L. Ron Hubbard."

15 MRS. GARVEY: The date on this is?

16 MR. GREENE: October 16, 1947 appears on the upper  
17 right-hand corner of this letter.

18 MRS. GARVEY: And Dianetics came out in 1950?  
19 The first Dianetic book came out when?

20 MR. DEWOLFE: 1950.

21 MR. BERFIELD: Counsel, I have a question: Through  
22 any testimony - and this appears to be a court document -  
23 was it ever established that was his signature or do --

24 MR. FLYNN: That's a document that was -- that has



1 appeared in a number of court proceedings. And Mr.  
2 Hubbard here could authenticate the signature, if  
3 necessary, and the document was seized by the Federal  
4 Bureau of Investigation.

5 MR. BERFIELD: Would you put that back up there  
6 again, please?

7 Would you look at that document, Mr. DeWolfe, and  
8 say for sure whether that is your father's signature?

9 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes. I've seen it many thousands  
10 of times. His signature, I mean. I don't mean this --

11 MR. LeCHER: How did you get these documents in  
12 your possession, Mr. Flynn?

13 MR. FLYNN: The documents have been available to  
14 the public for one period of time, during a nine-month  
15 sealing period in the United States Federal District  
16 Court in Washington, D.C. During that period of time,  
17 we obtained possession of many of them. We have also  
18 obtained possession of many of them through various  
19 court proceedings.

20 The documents are now on file and were placed on  
21 file with this city and before this Commission back in  
22 September. And they have all been a matter of public  
23 record since last September within this city.

24 The next exhibit, number 24, is a xeroxed copy of

1 the biographical outline of Mr. Hubbard from the book,  
2 Dianetics: The Original Thesis, which Mr. Berfield and  
3 Mr. Calderbank were referring to earlier.

4 (A copy of the biographical outline  
5 from Dianetics: The Original Thesis  
6 was marked as Exhibit No. 24, as of  
7 this date.)

8 MR. FLYNN: And rather than place the book into  
9 evidence, we are going to put a xeroxed copy of it into  
10 evidence. And Mr. Greene will read from a portion of  
11 that biography.

12 MR. GREENE: Again, this is from Exhibit 24, page  
13 158: "L. Ron Hubbard. Scientology was developed by L.  
14 Ron Hubbard, a writer and philosopher. It was completed  
15 after thirty-five years of research. Hubbard was born  
16 in Tilden, Nebraska on March 13, 1911. Much of Hubbard's  
17 early youth was spent in the American West, and he  
18 traveled extensively in Asia as a young man.

19 "He studied science and mathematics at George  
20 Washington University, graduating from Columbian College."  
21 Columbian College, as you may know, is the undergraduate  
22 Arts and Science Program at George Washington University.

23 "He attended Princeton University and obtained a  
24 degree as Doctor of Philosophy, Ph.D., from Sequoia  
University.

1 "Before World War II, he was well known in explora-  
2 tion circles and is to this day a member of the Explorers'  
3 Club. He wrote and published over fifteen million words  
4 of articles and novels of all kinds before World War II.  
5 During that war, he served as Commander of Corps Vettes  
6 and was extensively decorated. Crippled and blind at  
7 the end of the war, he resumed his studies in philosophy  
8 and by his discoveries recovered so fully that he was  
9 reclassified in 1949 for full combat duty.

10 "It is a matter of medical record that he has twice  
11 been pronounced dead, and in 1950 he was given a perfect  
12 score on mental and physical fitness reports. Revolted  
13 by war and man's inhumanity to man, he resigned his  
14 commission rather than assist the government research  
15 projects."

16 Dropping down some paragraphs: "Unlike any other  
17 philosopher at any age, Hubbard has led a very full and  
18 adventurous life. He has been the hero in numerous  
19 novels and even of a famous motion picture. Probably  
20 no philosopher of modern times has had the popularity  
21 and appeal of Hubbard or such startling successes in  
22 his own lifetime."

23 MR. LeCHER: What famous motion picture does he  
24 appear as the hero in?

1 MR. DeWOLFE: None.

2 I think that the motion picture that he may be  
3 referring to is Mister Roberts; that was a rumor that  
4 he spread around. But he had no connection with the  
5 movie, nor the play, nor the character Mister Roberts.

6 MRS. GARVEY: It says there that he was given a  
7 perfect score on mental and physical fitness reports. Is  
8 he currently getting disability checks from the federal  
9 government?

10 MR. FLYNN: If you know.

11 MR. DeWOLFE: I don't know. I do know that he con-  
12 tinued to receive them throughout the early fifties. I  
13 remember in '54 and '55 in Washington, D.C., he got one  
14 every month. I don't believe -- it was somewhere between  
15 \$80 and \$140.00 a month.

16 MRS. GARVEY: So, if he was receiving disability  
17 checks, he can't, obviously, be in perfect mental and  
18 physical shape.

19 MR. DeWOLFE: Correct.

20 MRS. GARVEY: That's unusual.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: Mr. DeWolfe, so that people don't  
22 misinterpret your testimony and what is being presented  
23 here as a personal attack on L. Ron Hubbard, do you per-  
24 sonally know of thousands of dollars, both in Dianetics

1 and Scientology, that was paid based on the information  
2 in the books, his biography, and his background, his  
3 research; is that right?

4 MR. DeWOLFE: Right.

5 MR. CALDERBANK: And you understand the weight of  
6 your testimony is that -- because, if many people are  
7 spending thousands of dollars daily here in Clearwater,  
8 based on his background, based solely just on the  
9 representations made in books, published and written  
10 articles, in verbal communication -- and you're now  
11 saying that each of these is false?

12 MR. DeWOLFE: Correct.

13 MR. BERFIELD: Along that same line, Mr. DeWolfe,  
14 his comments that he was blind and had total recovery,  
15 did he ever address that subject to you?

16 MR. DeWOLFE: He's never been blind, to my know-  
17 ledge, during the -- are you talking about being blind?

18 MR. BERFIELD: Yes, sir, wounded or --

19 MRS. GARVEY: You never questioned him about that?

20 MR. DeWOLFE: I'm sorry, what?

21 MRS. GARVEY: You never questioned him about that,  
22 that part of his biography?

23 MR. DeWOLFE: There were times during the fifties  
24 that were periods that he had been away from me - and

1 because of his incredible charisma - what did I know if  
2 he said he had been blinded and now he could see? But  
3 this, to my knowledge, he's never been blinded and always  
4 had pretty decent eyesight.

5 MR. BERFIELD: I have a question to the counselor:  
6 Do you have copies of his medical records?

7 MR. FLYNN: No, we don't. However, we do have  
8 copies of the outline of his naval career, which has been  
9 introduced into evidence, which we just went through.  
10 And it may be helpful if the Commission took that exhibit  
11 and each one of you scrutinize it so that you can see  
12 precisely where he was at various times.

13 In addition to that, we have some evidence of the  
14 discharge from the Oak Knoll Military Hospital, which we  
15 will be introducing, which shows that he suffered from  
16 a duodenal ulcer.

17 MR. CALDERBANK: You've never ever seen any records  
18 or case histories, a compiling of data, that your father  
19 did to verify any of the claims that he's made in  
20 Dianetics or auditing?

21 MR. DeWOLFE: No.

22 I knew he had an ulcer.

23 MR. HATCHETT: Pardon me. You did say he had an  
24 ulcer? I didn't hear you.

1 MR. DeWOLFE: Huh?

2 MR. HATCHETT: Yes, he had an ulcer?

3 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes, he had an ulcer.

4 MR. HATCHETT: I didn't hear you. Thank you.

5 MR. DeWOLFE: He drank copious amounts of that  
6 milky, chalky stuff that the Navy --

7 MR. LeCHER: Like Maalox?

8 MR. DeWOLFE: Yes. But it was far more unpleasant  
9 than that.

10 MR. LeCHER: Can we get to the next document?

11 MR. FLYNN: Yes. To speed things up here a little  
12 bit, what I will do is I'll mark two more biographical  
13 sketches of similar type as exhibits. The top one will  
14 be Exhibit 25 and the next one will be Exhibit 26.

15 (A copy of a biographical sketch was  
16 marked as Exhibit No. 25, as of this  
date;

17 A copy of a biographical sketch was  
18 marked as Exhibit No. 26, as of this  
date.)

19 MR. FLYNN: And then, we'll mark the cover of the  
20 book, All About Radiation.

21 (The cover of the book, All About  
22 Radiation, was marked as Exhibit No.  
27, as of this date.)

23 MR. FLYNN: As you can see in another biographical  
24 sketch, it basically says the same thing: he is a

1 graduate of George Washington University, Columbian  
2 College, which is the undergraduate school, and he  
3 gives his -- he represents himself to be a student at  
4 Princeton. Well, in fact, as I indicated to you at the  
5 outset, the only training he had at Princeton, and as Mr.  
6 DeWolfe testified, was connected with his naval training  
7 during World War II, which -- he was at no point a part  
8 of Princeton University as an undergraduate student.

9 And the cover of the book, if we could put that on  
10 so that everyone can see the representations right on  
11 the cover of the book, All About Radiation, it states  
12 that it is by a nuclear physicist and a medical doctor.  
13 It doesn't really appear that well on the projector, but,  
14 as you can see, that representation is held out right  
15 on the cover of the book.

16 And, in fact, if you open the book, there is no  
17 name of any doctor in the book. Under the -- the book  
18 is divided into two sections, Book I and Book II. Book  
19 I is apparently written by a medical doctor as has been  
20 held out to be on the cover, and at the bottom of the  
21 page the only thing that appears is "By Medicus," which  
22 is a Latin term that means medical. But there's no name  
23 of any medical doctor in this book who supposedly co-  
24 authored the book. But the inference is clear on the



1 front that it was written by a medical doctor and a  
2 nuclear physicist.

3 And Mr. Hubbard would like -- wants to testify  
4 as to who wrote the entire book.

5 MR. LeCHER: Who wrote the entire book, sir, about  
6 radiation?

7 MR. DeWOLFE: L. Ron Hubbard.

8 MR. LeCHER: L. Ron Hubbard. And he is not a  
9 medical doctor?

10 MR. FLYNN: You might want to answer that: Is your  
11 father a medical doctor?

12 MR. DeWOLFE: Is my father a medical doctor? I'm  
13 sorry, I didn't hear you.

14 MR. LeCHER: Is your father a medical doctor?

15 MR. DeWOLFE: No, nor is he a nuclear physicist.

16 MR. LeCHER: Has he ever been to any medical school  
17 in a foreign land? Has he ever been to a medical school  
18 in a foreign land like Mexico, England --

19 MR. DeWOLFE: No, never.

20 MR. LeCHER: Okay. Thank you.

21 / These hearings are really not -- appear to being  
22 a personal attack on your father. We're trying to get  
23 to the bottom of this to understand why he is so credi-  
24 ble to so many people. Apparently, he has no background

1 to back up his opinion of himself.

2 I'm glad you were able to come to speak to us  
3 today and yesterday, -sir.

4 Is there anything you'd like to --

5 MR. FLYNN: The next witness is Lori Taverna.

6 MR. LeCHER: Lori -- Miss Taverna; is that correct?

7 MS. TAVERNA: That's right.

8 MR. LeCHER: Will you please be sworn in by our  
9 City Clerk, Mrs. Williams?

10  
11 LORI TAVERNA, a witness herein,  
12 having first been duly sworn by a Clerk for the City of  
13 Clearwater, was examined and testified as follows:

14 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

15 Your name is Lori, L-o-r-i T-a-v-e-r-n-a.

16 I will ask you the same five basic questions that  
17 we have asked every other witness. The first one is:  
18 Are you appearing here today and testifying under oath  
19 voluntarily?

20 MS. TAVERNA: Yes, I am.

21 MR. LeCHER: Number two: Have you been paid by  
22 anyone for your testimony, other than for the expense  
23 of coming to Clearwater?

24 MS. TAVERNA: No, I haven't.

1 MR. LeCHER: Number three: Do you have a lawsuit  
2 against the Church of Scientology?

3 MS. TAVERNA: No, I don't.

4 MR. LeCHER: Number four: Does the Church of  
5 Scientology have a lawsuit against you?

6 MS. TAVERNA: No.

7 MR. LeCHER: Number five: Has anyone suggested to  
8 you that you should state anything but the truth or has  
9 anyone suggested that you change your testimony for any  
10 reason?

11 MS. TAVERNA: No.

12 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

13 Would you like to make a statement, or would you --  
14 how would you like to proceed?

15 MS. TAVERNA: Well --

16 MR. LeCHER: Start with your background; we'd like  
17 to hear that, first.

18 MS. TAVERNA: Okay.

19 It's a little hard for me to summarize my years  
20 in Scientology, but I'll try to get it together. I'm  
21 very nervous right now.

22 MR. LeCHER: Well, don't be.

23 MS. TAVERNA: Okay.

24 MR. LeCHER: We're nice people.

1 MRS. GARVEY: Bring the mike up.

2 MR. LeCHER: Bring the mike up so that the people  
3 can hear you in the back of the room and we can hear you  
4 up here, and it will all be audible.

5 MS. TAVERNA: Okay.

6 Basically, I've been in Scientology for seventeen  
7 years. I came in sometime in June 1965. I attended a  
8 free lecture, and in that lecture I was told about the  
9 active mind, how it affects people, and there's a state  
10 known as clear where you can be rid of this mind and rid  
11 yourself of all psychosomatic illness, all irrational  
12 behavior, be totally free, IQ would be raised, and so  
13 forth.

14 It sounded very good to me. It sounded like some-  
15 thing I was looking for. Part of the aims of Scientology  
16 were a world without crime, without - I forgot already -  
17 without war, crime, insanity. And I had two small  
18 children, and I just thought it was something to make a  
19 better world. And I decided to find out more about it.

20 After -- then, in the next few years, I took  
21 courses; I became an auditor, which is a counselor; I  
22 became trained as a supervisor to train other auditors.  
23 I read about Ron Hubbard, about his past, that he was  
24 blind and crippled in the war, that he was restored to

1 health by his own techniques from his research, that -- I  
2 became very dedicated to Ron Hubbard. I felt that he was,  
3 I guess in a way, supernatural or the greatest person  
4 I'd ever heard of.

5 I'm just going to look at my notes.

6 MR. LeCHER: Certainly. You can follow your out-  
7 line or your notes, if you prefer.

8 MS. TAVERNA: Well, I just took some notes on  
9 background. The rest I'll just follow from my outline --

10 MR. LeCHER: Certainly.

11 MS. TAVERNA: -- here.

12 Oh, then, I worked on staff for many years after  
13 that as an auditor and training supervisor. I got paid  
14 about -- between \$3.00 and \$10.00 a week for this. And  
15 money wasn't important to me, because I felt the purpose  
16 was a good purpose.

17 I also felt a responsibility. Like, in Scientology,  
18 if you're not contributing, you feel guilty. And I  
19 wanted to help, so, most of the years, I had worked as  
20 a staff member.

21 I also felt that -- it's sort of said in a lot of  
22 the writings of Scientology that it is the only thing  
23 that can save this planet from destruction. There's a  
24 lot of talk against the medical profession, mental health,

1 and enemies of Scientology: the government, the CIA.  
2 I had started to feel that it was us against them. And  
3 then, I stopped associating with people not in Scien-  
4 tology because I felt they didn't understand. They  
5 wouldn't -- I couldn't communicate with them. So,  
6 basically, it became a larger part of my life.

7 Oh, and Ron Hubbard was worshipped by many people;  
8 he was looked at as a god. I never actually worshipped  
9 him, but anything he said I believed to be true. After  
10 so many years, it made sense to me. Whatever he said,  
11 any orders he gave were followed without any question.

12 I got divorced from my husband in about 1971 I  
13 would say, mainly, because he wasn't a Scientologist. I  
14 felt he didn't want to help, he didn't want to contribute  
15 and so forth, and a lot of distance developed between  
16 us because of this.

17 I traveled to England, to Spain, Los Angeles, and  
18 did all these upper levels as a highly-trained auditor.

19 I'll give specifics of what I did up until now,  
20 briefly.

21 MR. LeCHER: Sure.

22 MS. TAVERNA: In 1971, I went to the Professional  
23 Supervisors' School in Los Angeles, and I did the course  
24 in two weeks. And then, I saw a telex from Ron Hubbard

1 which said all people doing training had to do a training  
2 drill called TR 0, which is a communication drill where  
3 you sit and confront another person. You don't speak,  
4 you don't move; you don't do anything like that. Now,  
5 he added in his telex that you're not allowed to blink.

6 So, I questioned the telex that was shown to me,  
7 then, I was word cleared, which means in Scientology --  
8 there's a rule that if you disagree with any of the  
9 technology, you have to have a misunderstood word. So,  
10 I was word cleared, and they said, "No, Ron Hubbard said  
11 blinkless." I felt it was very natural to blink and it  
12 wasn't a distraction to being there. So, we had to --  
13 oh, you had to do it for two hours. You had to sit in  
14 a chair, confront another person, and not blink your  
15 eyes for a two-hour period. It was timed on a clock.

16 So, I stayed there for three months, and I did  
17 this drill seven days a week, from eight in the morning  
18 till eleven at night. Students accumulated there for  
19 many months because no one was passing this. Duress was  
20 placed on the students. There was a Commanding Officer  
21 who walked around with a nightstick and he would bang  
22 it on the table and say, "You're going to pass today."

23 A lot of students went psychotic. Some students  
24 fainted during this. Many students had no more white

1 left in their eyes; it almost looked like they were  
2 bleeding.

3 I realized at this point - this is back in '71 -  
4 that people were insane there. I tried to talk to the  
5 Ethics Officer, talked to people and say, "Something is  
6 wrong here." I was labeled a troublesome student; I  
7 was put in a separate room. They said to "Take Lori  
8 Taverna out of the room, we'll get some passes."

9 So, they started passing people who weren't doing  
10 this. They passed people with tears running down their  
11 eyes. I said, "You either do it or you don't do it."  
12 But after three months, Ron Hubbard came out with a  
13 bulletin, which was called "TR Breakthrough." He saw,  
14 I imagine, that no one was passing, and he said, "We  
15 no longer have time requirements on TR 0. You do it  
16 until you achieve the end result." So, at that point,  
17 everyone went home.

18 Something else happened during this time in '71.  
19 I was approached by Bruce Raymond, who was a member of  
20 the Guardian's Office. He asked me if I would -- he said  
21 I was chosen to be a secret agent. He said he had a  
22 dossier on me; he went to rattle off my whole life  
23 history. He said I was chosen because I had an excellent  
24 Ethics record, that I was well respected and knew I was a good



1 person. He was in a special division of the Guardian's  
2 Office to protect Ron Hubbard's life.

3 I was very confused. I was also frightened because  
4 I didn't know who he was exactly or who I was dealing  
5 with. But I thought if this was the real purpose - you  
6 know, I loved Ron Hubbard very much - and I said if I  
7 could do something to help him I will. He gave me a code  
8 name, and I was to use a post office box on my return to  
9 New York and we would communicate through this post office  
10 box.

11 He said if I ever divulged this that he would -- I  
12 would be dealt with severely. And he said he would see  
13 that I was declared what they call Type 3 PTS, which  
14 means that you're psychotic and that they would see that  
15 I would be committed, and he would deny ever speaking to  
16 me.

17 So, that's the only thing in Scientology that ever  
18 really frightened me. I went back to New York. I did  
19 communicate one or two times through this post office  
20 box. I was sent documents, some kind of training manual  
21 on how to do espionage, how to be an undercover agent.  
22 I studied it, sent it back. I passed the course. And  
23 I got my first assignment, which I looked at and I felt  
24 was so absurd that I just didn't want to be a part of it.

1           It said something - I don't remember exactly -  
2 something to the effect that I was to go to different  
3 areas of Manhattan and see if I spot anyone wearing  
4 black clothes. And it was just so absurd to me, I said,  
5 you know, I just couldn't bring myself to do this. And  
6 I was to see if they were wearing partly black clothes or  
7 totally black clothes.

8           So, I just ripped up the orders. And then, I was  
9 frightened that something was going to happen to me  
10 because I wasn't cooperating. So, I just put all the  
11 things into my bathtub and burned all the things. I  
12 never communicated to them again. But I was left with  
13 the feeling that I would be approached again. But nothing  
14 happened with it.

15           I didn't see Bruce Raymond again till 1972 or 1973.  
16 A very good friend of mine told me that he was selected  
17 to do a Guardian's Office project and he was meeting some-  
18 one at my apartment, and it turned out to be Bruce  
19 Raymond. And when I opened the door, I almost fainted  
20 because I had this earlier fear, and now he was in my  
21 house. He came with a girl named Kathy Savas. I had to  
22 leave the room because the Guardian's Office was very  
23 secretive.

24           He did this project. He told me when he was doing

1           it. Then, after he did it - I'm sure he was bonded and  
2           everything, but we were very close - he told me what he  
3           did. He said, "I had to go into a building in Manhattan  
4           mid-town and I had to get someone's fingerprints on a  
5           blank piece of paper or an envelope." He said it was a  
6           woman's fingerprints, someone who wrote a book against  
7           Scientology. And he said, "I don't know why I had to do  
8           this." He said, "But it must have been something very  
9           important because I was treated like a hero." He said  
10          they were all making a very big fuss over this, and he  
11          was awarded auditing as a reward for doing this project.

12                 That's all I know about that. But if I just -- it  
13          came back to my memory when I remembered about Paulette  
14          Cooper. I assume it might have been Paulette Cooper,  
15          because I think something was done like that. And I  
16          felt very shocked and hurt that this friend of mine did  
17          it because he's now dead - he died in 1975 - but he was  
18          part of something very illegal and corrupt and he was  
19          never told what he was doing. And he was never part of  
20          the Guardian's Office.

21                 I've been in so many years that I probably could  
22          talk a lot, so I'm going to try to summarize.

23                 So, I was kind of upset because I have three  
24          children and I'm divorced, so I never could make enough

1 money to support my children properly. So, I would leave  
2 staff for a little while, get my business going, be  
3 successful. And just as I was doing really well, there  
4 was an event in New York, and there was a project called  
5 Operation Z.

6 This was a program to train people to disseminate  
7 Scientology on a large scale to thousands of people at  
8 a time. And it was supposed to be public lecturing to  
9 beginning -- new people to explain what it is. We were  
10 told that you didn't have to have a contract to an organization or  
11 be part of the organization, because I was unhappy as a  
12 staff member and I didn't want to do that. He said the  
13 training would take two weeks, you would go to Clearwater.  
14 When you returned, you'll be paid approximately \$700.00  
15 a week. He said that they already had Madison Square  
16 Garden booked and John Travolta was going to be there  
17 giving the seminars.

18 This made me very happy, because I felt that  
19 Scientology could be delivered properly and to reach  
20 people, because at this time I felt it was the greatest  
21 thing in the world. Even though there were outnesses  
22 all these years, it's hard to describe why I stayed in,  
23 but I felt that people in it were not duplicating the  
24 technology properly. I said, "Well, this is something

1 good." I signed up immediately; I dropped everything.  
2 I paid my rent a month in advance, I had my children taken  
3 care of, and I was on the plane. I came to Clearwater  
4 in 1978, it was June.

5 When I got here, I found out it was not exactly  
6 as the fellow had said. Things weren't organized; it  
7 wasn't all ready to go. They had people here who were  
8 in Scientology two weeks, they weren't trained. They  
9 wouldn't be able to deliver this to the public.

10 After a couple of weeks, I saw the project was going  
11 nowhere, and I took over as the Ops Z Trainer. I fled,  
12 and I was trying to get this project off the ground.

13 Anyway, instead of two weeks, I ended up staying  
14 here three months in Clearwater. I had accumulated a  
15 couple of thousand dollars in debts at home because my  
16 business collapsed. I had someone running it for me,  
17 but it didn't work out. My children had to go back to  
18 school in September. And I didn't want to stay anymore  
19 because nothing was true of what was told to me.

20 Also, when I got here, I was very, very shocked  
21 to see Fort Harrison. The only thing I'd ever seen  
22 was a brochure showing pools and cabanas. And Flag is  
23 promoted to Scientologists as the greatest place on  
24 the planet, the safest place. It's something like going

1 to heaven; everyone wants to come here.

2 I was brought to the room when I first arrived -  
3 it was in the evening - and I was shown to a room at  
4 Fort Harrison. And I went to open the door and I  
5 couldn't open the door. And I looked in. And the girl  
6 who brought me there who had recruited me for this said  
7 the light was broke and we couldn't put the light on.  
8 And I kind of squeezed in the door. There was luggage  
9 all over the floor. There was literally no room to walk  
10 on the floor.

11 I said, "You have to be kidding." I said, you  
12 know, "This is my room." She said, "Well, I'm very  
13 embarrassed. We'll see if we can do something better  
14 tomorrow." I said, "I don't feel that I could sleep  
15 in here." But there was no other place. So, I climbed  
16 over things. I couldn't open my suitcase, I just piled  
17 it on something else.

18 There were ten beds in the room, four bunks on  
19 each side and, then, two bunks against another wall.  
20 The room was very small, I don't know, twenty feet -- a  
21 small room. There was no walking space. The fourth  
22 bunk was about this high from the ceiling so that -- and  
23 that's where I had climbed up to; there was no ladder.

24 I stayed there that night. And the next day they

1 gave me another room which had, I think, eight beds.  
2 But this room was a little bit more orderly because the  
3 people in it decided amongst themselves that they would  
4 take responsibility and keep it clean. So, I stayed  
5 there. For the rest of my stay, I stayed in that room.

6 Anyway, I left there. I went home. And I had to  
7 leave my apartment because I didn't have any money at  
8 this time and live with somebody until I started working  
9 again. And soon after that, I got back in shape and got  
10 another apartment.

11 I didn't have anything to do with Scientology  
12 after that actively as a staff member, but I was still a  
13 Scientologist.

14 Then, in 1979, I went to another event. This event  
15 was promoted as the most spectacular thing that has ever  
16 happened in Scientology. So, I went. And there was a  
17 speaker there who discussed NED for OTs, called NOTS for  
18 short. He said that Ron Hubbard made a breakthrough that  
19 was beyond your wildest dreams. They had a person who  
20 had received some of this auditing. He said that -- he  
21 said, "Imagine what you think OT is like, the wildest  
22 dreams that you can get of what OT means." And everyone  
23 in the audience did it. He said, "It's beyond that."

24 My expectations of what OT was were very high.

1 When I came in, I expected to achieve states which I  
2 actually didn't during the time before this, and I -- my  
3 ration -- I rationalized this by saying, "Well, I came  
4 in, I consider, fairly capable to start with." And I  
5 thought the next level would come out for me, because  
6 Ron Hubbard always said, "I'm working on upper levels."  
7 It only went up to eight, but he said that he had eighteen  
8 levels above that, but they can't be released yet.

9 So, I said, "Well, I think other people need this,  
10 but I'm -- my levels will come later." So, I thought  
11 NOTS, this is it. This is the one that he originally  
12 said.

13 I think I was too far away from this before.

14 Claims were made at this meeting that miracles  
15 occurred regularly in sessions, that -- it sounds foolish  
16 now. But someone said that a person lost thirty pounds  
17 in one session. This is a person who weighed about  
18 four hundred pounds, you know, said he lost thirty pounds  
19 in one auditing session. They said it was so good  
20 that people would open the material and they were so  
21 blown out - as Scientologists say - that they could only  
22 take five minutes of this auditing at a time because it  
23 was too much to handle and so good.

24 And people were so elated at this meeting that they



1        said, "It's finally here, the thing we've been waiting  
2        for all these years." I decided that this would be my  
3        time, after all -- sixteen years or whatever it was, to  
4        join the Sea Organization. I decided I would join the .  
5        Sea Org., and I would make this for the rest of my life --  
6        I would dedicate to being a NOTS auditor. My two sisters  
7        also decided to join the Sea Org.

8        I went to Los Angeles, signed the papers. My  
9        daughter came with me; she was ten at the time. She  
10       joined, also. She stayed in Los Angeles and I came here  
11       to Clearwater for training.

12       The first two weeks of my training were fine. The  
13       room situation -- actually, I didn't stay in the rooms  
14       at the Fort Harrison. My sisters and myself, we got a  
15       room at the Gray Moss Inn, which is across the street.  
16       We paid for our own room because we didn't want to live  
17       in the dorm.

18       I audited -- this NOTS material was a big break-  
19       through. I saw the materials and, in fact, it isn't a  
20       breakthrough. It's a continuation of O -- Section OT 3.  
21       It's actually almost the same exact material, which I  
22       didn't realize at the time. It's hard to describe. But  
23       when you first see it, it looks different. And there's  
24       a relief or seeing -- I realized that the big blow out

1 or this thing that people get is relief, to say, "There  
2 is more hope."

3 The explanation of -- well, I audited many people  
4 on this NED for OTs, and they had been OT for ten years,  
5 some of them. And the relief was "This is why I was  
6 crazy all these years because 3 was never complete.  
7 That's why I've been insane all these years." They came  
8 in desperation.

9 Some of the preclears, or people on auditing, said,  
10 "If this doesn't work, I don't want to live anymore."  
11 They said, "I'm tired of holding up this image of being  
12 an OT in Scientology, having illness, having irrational  
13 feelings." They came more that "This is the last hope."

14 I didn't see any miracles when I was auditing here.  
15 The people I audited were, as I said, in desperation,  
16 wanting it to work. I felt that people who were getting  
17 wins -- it was almost like the Emperor's New Clothes,  
18 like, if you didn't get -- everyone was saying how won-  
19 derful it was. If you didn't say it, there was something  
20 wrong with you. Because it says in the technology of  
21 OT 3 that if you don't have these body thetans - I don't  
22 know if you've discussed OT 3 - but if you don't have  
23 this type of thing, there's something wrong with you and  
24 you're really in bad shape. So, people tend to say, "Oh,

1           yes, I see them, too."

2           Let me stop; I just want to see -- oh, okay.

3           So, I was auditing people for a few weeks, and I  
4           felt complete on course. I said, "Well, whatever people  
5           are going to get from this, maybe when they finish it,  
6           something will happen or miracles will come." I audited  
7           successfully on what it was, and I felt ready to go back  
8           to Los Angeles.

9           The course took me two weeks. And I looked on the  
10          checksheet, which was with the course material, and it  
11          said, "Length of course: two weeks." And I told the  
12          Director of Processing who arranged the auditing sessions,  
13          "I'm ready to go home." She said, "Oh, no, this takes  
14          months." I said, "Well, it says on the checksheet two  
15          weeks. That's from Ron Hubbard." She said, "Nobody  
16          finishes in two weeks." I said, "Well, I've done all  
17          the requirements."

18          So -- that is actually the start of the nightmare  
19          at Clearwater. I tried to go home for weeks and weeks.  
20          I started to go to this place called Cramming. Cramming  
21          is the department in Scientology where you go if you  
22          make an error in your auditing. And they supposedly  
23          correct you on this.

24          So, my first -- the start of the downfall was my

1 first visit to Cramming. I went in at ten o'clock.. I  
2 was screamed at, I was told I had misunderstood. The  
3 Cramming Officer cursed; he pounded on the table, screamed  
4 and screamed at me. And I looked for the -- I said, "If  
5 I have a misunderstood, I'm very willing to find it,  
6 but I don't know where it is." He said, "Shut up and  
7 sit down and find your misunderstood word."

8 I was getting very upset at this time, and I ended  
9 up staying there till twelve-thirty at night. And at the  
10 end of the evening, it turned out that I didn't have a  
11 misunderstood. And he said, "Well, you came to Cramming  
12 for this." And I said, "No, I didn't." He hadn't even  
13 read the folder. He was grilling me on this thing that  
14 didn't even happen. And as I walked out, he said, "Don't  
15 worry, Lori, we'll make a good auditor out of you some-  
16 day." He was a very nasty, upsetting person.

17 I was sick through the night; I was throwing up.  
18 The next day I just felt I couldn't go in; I was very  
19 upset about this because I had been doing so well and  
20 wanted to go home.

21 From there I went to Ethics. I said, "Okay, I'll  
22 try again." I went back and said, "I'll audit more."  
23 For the next few months, anything I did that didn't work,  
24 they came up with another requirement. We had meetings

1 in the Director of Processing Office every morning; it  
2 was called muster. And everyone had to say how many  
3 hours they did the day before. There was high, high  
4 pressure on producing hours. If you didn't produce five  
5 hours of auditing on a person, you were put in a con-  
6 dition, you were sent to Ethics, and you were not given  
7 any liberty. Liberty is the time off to see your chil-  
8 dren or to wash your clothes.

9 The auditors became frantic at Flag to get these  
10 hours. I overheard several conversations. One in  
11 particular, where one of the auditors cursed, and she  
12 said, "These blankety-blank people with these ten-minute  
13 sessions, I'm sick of them getting wins." She said, "I  
14 need my hours." And I looked at her and I said, "Well,  
15 that's what we're here for to give people wins; they're  
16 supposed to feel better." She said, "But I need my  
17 hours." Because if she didn't get the five hours, she  
18 couldn't see her baby, because you only got off a few  
19 hours a week on Saturday. But if you didn't do your  
20 quota, you couldn't see your children.

21 So, I said, "Well, why don't we have meetings and  
22 discuss how many people we're doing?" Let's say, like,  
23 if you said, "They did better today," it was — no one wanted  
24 to hear this. It was only announced how much money we made;

1 the graph was put there. There was a big announcement  
2 that we were -- at that particular week we had done a  
3 million dollars in income. That occurred several weeks.  
4 We were making a million dollars a week at that time.

5 MR. LeCHER: In Clearwater?

6 MS. TAVERNA: Right here at Fort Harrison in  
7 Clearwater.

8 We had a graph of money in, and it would be -- they  
9 would show us, and they would say daily, "Ron Hubbard is  
10 not happy with the statistics. The hours are down."

11 When the stats were down - they called them stats  
12 for statistics - when the stats were down at the Fort  
13 Harrison, the highest staff -- they were put on rice  
14 and beans. They would have this for breakfast, lunch,  
15 and dinner. They were not allowed to eat any other food.  
16 When we went to the galley, we would have regular food,  
17 but the staff would have rice and beans. And this would  
18 stay until the stats went up again.

19 I started to feel very upset here because I said,  
20 "I came here to help people." I thought this was  
21 finally, after fifteen years of Scientology, this was  
22 going to be the process or the thing that would really  
23 do it for people. I felt that I was in, like, an insane  
24 asylum. People didn't care about anyone.

1           If you had money and you were a public person, you  
2           were given the royal treatment. But behind the scenes,  
3           the auditors, the Commanding Officer, would make a  
4           mockery of public people who brought the money there.  
5           They would say things like, "Look at them sitting out  
6           there in the sun," you know, very derogatory remarks  
7           about the people who were coming there, because they  
8           were called dilettantes. Because they weren't in the  
9           Sea Org., they weren't dedicated. They were just coming  
10          here to receive auditing.

11          I said, "But these people are paying for the  
12          service. These people have worked hard for their money.  
13          They have a right to sit here by the pool because they're  
14          paying for their services." But the attitude in the Sea  
15          Org. is: If you are not in the Sea Org., you are not  
16          contributing. You're a dilettante. You just want to  
17          take care of yourself. You don't care about mankind.

18          I started to get very, very physically ill at this  
19          time. I missed my children. I didn't feel that I was  
20          helping anyone. I have never seen a miracle with auditing  
21          all the years I've been in. I've seen people get better  
22          through reading the technology, through applying practical  
23          things in a philosophy. I have never recommended auditing  
24          to people; I've always said, "Get trained, that'll help

1           you." I never saw the actual purpose for auditing. I  
2           thought you could realize the things by reading it and  
3           learning more about life.

4           MR. LeCHER: What term? Get what, trained?

5           MS. TAVERNA: Excuse me.

6           MR. LeCHER: What term did you use? Get what?

7           MS. TAVERNA: Get trained. In other words, take  
8           courses --

9           MR. LeCHER: Oh.

10          MS. TAVERNA: -- read the material, rather than  
11          sit and hold the cans and talk about your case.

12          MR. LeCHER: I understand.

13          MS. TAVERNA: I felt it was more advantageous to  
14          be trained and learn the technology and use it on your-  
15          self. Many Scientologists have to run to their auditor  
16          because their case is restimulated and things like this.  
17          I didn't feel that was helping people; it was making them  
18          more dependent on this auditing, which is very, very  
19          expensive.

20          People spend hundreds of thousands of dollars.  
21          Individuals have spent up to two and three hundred  
22          thousand dollars on this NOTS auditing. I felt I was  
23          betraying these people; I didn't want to audit NOTS  
24          anymore. I didn't want to be there.



1 I said I wanted to rout out of the Sea Org., I  
2 wanted to go home. The Ethics Officer - his name was  
3 Richard Kennedy - he said to me, "We can't let you leave  
4 here." I said, "Why?" He said, "Because you're too  
5 capable." He said, "You have no Ethics record, you're  
6 very well respected, you've trained thousands of people,  
7 you're loved very much in Scientology, you're auditing  
8 is perfect, you're getting good results. If we let you  
9 leave here, people might think there's something wrong  
10 with Flag."

11 I realized at that point that it wasn't going to  
12 be easy for me to get out. From then on, I considered --  
13 I felt that I was a prisoner. No one told me I was a  
14 prisoner, but I knew that I wouldn't just walk out the  
15 door. In Scientology, you don't just leave. It's  
16 embedded over the years that, once you're a Scientologist,  
17 there's nowhere to go; you just don't leave.

18 So, I was getting sicker and sicker. I couldn't  
19 sleep at night; I was up most of the night. I couldn't  
20 eat. I developed -- I got a very bad arthritis attack.  
21 My joints became very swollen; my knee got black and blue  
22 and swollen. I couldn't walk. One time, I couldn't get  
23 out of bed for a week, and they said someone was going to  
24 come to give me a session. The person never came.

1 I finally got out of bed and I walked a few blocks  
2 over to where the bank building is; I don't the name of  
3 that street. It took me about twenty-five minutes to  
4 walk there because my leg was so swollen. When I got  
5 there, Richard Kennedy humiliated me. I'm very sensitive  
6 about this; I'm trying not to get emotional. He said  
7 that -- he called me a cripple. And he said, "Look who's  
8 here," you know, "Lori Taverna." He said, "Boy, if you  
9 didn't get here soon, we were going to send an ambulance  
10 over with a wheelchair to take the cripple here."

11 So, again, I said, "I would like to go home." At  
12 this point, I said, "It's not -- it's not the Sea Org.  
13 It's not you, it's me. I'm not equipped for the Sea  
14 Org." My case -- I would say anything at this point to  
15 go home. I felt that I was starting to -- I felt as if  
16 I was going insane. I had no touch with the -- no con-  
17 tact with the outside world. We were not allowed to talk  
18 about Flag to anyone, phone calls. We were instructed  
19 not to mention anything about the Flag Land Base to any-  
20 one outside of Flag.

21 MR. LeCHER: Amazing. I'm just talking to myself.  
22 It's amazing what you're saying.

23 MS. TAVERNA: Yeah.

24 So, at this point, I cried a lot, I was sick a lot,

1 and I went back and forth to training. I'd try again.

2 At times I'd get very upset and say, "Well, no  
3 matter how bad it is, I have to stay here because I  
4 can't just leave because I'll be betraying Ron Hubbard."  
5 I felt that Ron had done so much for mankind - at this  
6 time I felt this way - that -- "Look what he's gone  
7 through. I know these people here are insane, but Ron  
8 isn't here. And if he only knew what was going on, he  
9 would help."

10 I wrote him long letters. I don't know if he got  
11 them or not.

12 One time it got particularly bad. When I went  
13 back, and even though I was sick, I tried to do it again.  
14 And they said, "Well, we want a tape recording of your  
15 session," which was a requirement to check your TRs,  
16 which was your communication. I did the tape. It was  
17 passed by my supervisor on the first tape. It went to  
18 the case supervisor, which was Jeff Walker. He brought  
19 up a technicality which had nothing to do with the TRs.  
20 There was always another technicality why I couldn't go  
21 home.

22 And I realized that no matter what I did, they  
23 would never say I graduated. They didn't know what to  
24 do with me at this point. So, I was disintegrating

1 physically and mentally, and I couldn't -- I was no  
2 longer able to audit people.

3 So, one day I was at the Gray Moss Inn -- and I  
4 hadn't slept for about three nights. I slept in the  
5 same clothes -- or I was wearing the same clothes. I  
6 didn't know where I was. Day and night appeared the same  
7 to me. And I just -- my sisters, also. My sisters were  
8 also living with me at the Gray Moss. They had gone in  
9 to do their auditing or whatever they were doing.

10 And I just walked out of the Gray Moss, and I  
11 walked down Fort Harrison Avenue and I got in a cab and  
12 I went to the airport. And I had an American Express  
13 card, and I flew to New York. I -- what they call in  
14 Scientology, blow.

15 I just couldn't bear it. I felt that if I didn't  
16 leave at that point, I would physically die; I couldn't  
17 live anymore. And I don't remember going home; I was  
18 in a daze. I know I hid at the airport; I was in fear  
19 of my life. I wasn't sure what people were capable of,  
20 but I had heard a lot of stories about things that were  
21 done to people. And we have a policy in Scientology  
22 of handling a blown student, that you are to physically  
23 restrain them.

24 So, I just got to the airport and I got on the

1 plane. I think I just hid -- I found a corner and just  
2 sat there for three or four hours. It was a long time  
3 because I didn't know when the flights were or -- I  
4 wanted to get away from them.

5 I got on the plane. And I had called from a  
6 telephone booth a friend of mine in New York, and I  
7 just said, "Be at the airport." I cried all the way  
8 home on the plane; I couldn't see, my eyes were swollen.  
9 I was, I guess, in a delirious state.

10 When I got off the plane, through a blur, I saw  
11 uniforms, which was the Sea Org. uniform. Obviously,  
12 they had telexed, which they do, "Lori Taverna blew  
13 Flag," and they were waiting for me in New York.

14 I was too weak to walk, and my friend came over  
15 and held me up. I felt that I was going to faint, and  
16 I said to him, "Tell them to go away." And my friend  
17 aided me by keeping these people away from me. They were  
18 part of the New York branch of the Sea Organization;  
19 they liaised with Clearwater, with Flag here.

20 So, he successfully told them -- kept them away  
21 from me, and he took me home. I was too weak to speak  
22 to him to tell him what happened. I just rested without  
23 talking. And I slept. And then, the next morning, the  
24 whole thing -- I realized what I did. I said, "I left

1 Flag." It was, like, terrifying to me that I did this.  
2 It was such a crime; it was such a terrible, harmful  
3 thing that I had done. And I said, "I have to go back."

4 I think of it now -- I know it must sound insane,  
5 but I felt that I -- I still can't -- I said, "I can't  
6 do this to Ron Hubbard." To know that a NOTS auditor  
7 blew Flag was the highest crime and the biggest betrayal  
8 that I could ever, ever do.

9 So, I got on the next plane and I came back to  
10 Clearwater. Before I did, I went to the New York Organi-  
11 zation and I said, "You don't have to look for me or  
12 come bring me back. I'm going back on my own free will."  
13 I wrote a long letter to Ron Hubbard. I told him every-  
14 thing that was occurring; I said that I hadn't been able  
15 to leave Flag. "I feel I've done all the requirements."

16 I arrived back in Clearwater -- do you want me to  
17 continue talking?

18 MR. LeCHER: No -- yes. I'm just looking at the  
19 time. We should break for lunch soon and we should  
20 question you after lunch.

21 Why don't we go till twelve-thirty and, then, we  
22 can break for lunch and come back around two --

23 MS. TAVERNA: Okay.

24 MR. LeCHER: -- and you can finish and, then, we

1 can ask you some questions.

2 MR. CALDERBANK: How long will it take, do you  
3 think, to finish your story?

4 MS. TAVERNA: It won't be very long, because the  
5 last thing I've done in Scientology is this what I'm  
6 telling you now, when I stayed at Flag --

7 MR. LeCHER: We'll go the latest till twelve-  
8 thirty.

9 MS. TAVERNA: Okay.

10 MR. LeCHER: If you can finish in that time, I'd  
11 appreciate it. Then, we'll ask you questions and you  
12 can reiterate after lunch.

13 MS. TAVERNA: So, I will actually finish everything  
14 I have to say by twelve-thirty and --

15 MR. LeCHER: If you can.

16 MS. TAVERNA: All right.

17 MR. LeCHER: If you -- I'd like to have you back  
18 after lunch anyway so we can ask you a few questions.

19 MS. TAVERNA: Okay, fine.

20 MR. LeCHER: If you can't finish, save it for later.

21 MS. TAVERNA: Okay.

22 So, I came back. When I came back, I was treated  
23 as a Blown Student. I was -- I had to do Ethics con-  
24 ditions; I had to make amends. I had to do physical

1 labor to make up for my crime. I had to get -- do all  
2 this and, when it was completed, I had to have people  
3 sign that I was allowed back into the group. I did all  
4 of this.

5 I went back. I said I would do anything, I would  
6 do retraining. I went back and did my training again.  
7 There were no misunderstands found. I went back to  
8 auditing people. The same thing happened: finishing,  
9 not being able to go home.

10 Again, I went down again. I got very sick again.  
11 The times that I was physically ill at the Fort Harrison --  
12 one time in particular was when the arthritis really  
13 flared up. I was sitting, waiting to see the Ethics  
14 Officer, and the Commanding Officer, Bill Franks, came  
15 by and screamed very loudly, "What are you doing here?  
16 Why aren't you auditing?" I said, "Because I'm sick."  
17 He said, "What kind of sick?" He said, "Maybe cleaning  
18 toilets will fix that."

19 And I was put on cleaning toilets for the afternoon  
20 and doing physical work. I was then put on work doing --  
21 putting paper clips through binders when my fingers --  
22 I couldn't bend my fingers from the arthritis. And I  
23 don't know if it was intentional, but I burst into tears  
24 because I couldn't bend my fingers to do the work that



1           they gave me.

2           I was put in the kitchen, in the galley, to wash  
3           pots, in the laundry room, all types of physical labor  
4           during times that I was ill. This was to make amends  
5           for whatever -- or I don't know.

6           One particular time, I was -- I went back to my  
7           training and I was trying very hard. Even though I was --  
8           couldn't sleep and couldn't eat, I was, like, going  
9           through my training, saying, "I'm going to do it this  
10          time no matter what. I'm not going to let them stop me."

11          I was holding some folders, auditing folders, and  
12          all of a sudden I felt that I was starting to faint or  
13          something was happening. My left side started to go  
14          numb and I started -- my hands went into a spasm. I felt  
15          that I was getting a heart attack, and the left side of  
16          my face started to feel paralyzed. I tried to stay calm,  
17          and I walked -- I don't know if I told the person in  
18          charge. You're not allowed to go anywhere without  
19          informing your senior or your supervisor.

20          I think I slowly walked to the Medical Officer.  
21          The Fort Harrison had a Medical Officer who handled any  
22          ill person. You go on what's called a routing form, and  
23          the first person you see is the Medical Officer. So, I  
24          walked into his office and I tried to speak very slowly.

1 I said, "I feel very sick." By the time I got there, my  
2 legs started to go into a spasm and my hands crumbled  
3 up and I couldn't feel the left side of my face.

4 I became very frightened. And I said, "I feel  
5 that I am maybe getting a heart attack." I couldn't  
6 breathe; I had severe pains in my chest. The Medical  
7 Officer said -- he looked like he was concerned. He  
8 hadn't been concerned before. But he said -- he studied  
9 for a while and then said, "Well, go to your room and  
10 rest for a while." This is the first time I had been  
11 told to rest and not put on physical work.

12 I said, "You don't understand, I feel that some-  
13 thing is happening to me." I was trying to tell him I  
14 needed medical assistance. He looked again and said,  
15 "Well, why don't you come back in about an hour and let  
16 me know how you're feeling?" And I was trying not to  
17 get upset.

18 And then, my left side really went into a spasm  
19 and my -- something happened to the air; I couldn't  
20 breathe. And he made a phone call, he got a car, and  
21 I was rushed to a doctor. It was an oriental woman; I  
22 forgot her name. I think she's on Fort Harrison Road.  
23 It's about five minutes from the Fort Harrison.

24 I went in there and she gave me a pill to take. I

1 found out -- I asked her later and it was a Valium, which  
2 I had never taken in my life before, but it was to relax  
3 me. And she said that -- she gave me an electrocardio-  
4 gram, and I was to stay there for about an hour. She  
5 said that my heart was fine. She said I hyperventilated  
6 and I had muscle spasms from nerves. She said I was  
7 suffering from extreme stress, from physical exhaustion.

8 And she said, "I know you're part of the Church  
9 of Scientology and I know that you must be very con-  
10 scientious." She said, "I noticed a lot of the people  
11 there are in the same state," because they obviously  
12 had come to her. She said, "They work too hard, too  
13 many hours." She said, "You have to learn to rest."

14 She prescribed walks for an hour a day and hot  
15 baths three times a day, and certain things that I had  
16 to do to recuperate, which I actually never did.

17 I don't know where I'm up to from here.

18 Anyway, I'll briefly end it here, my leaving  
19 Clearwater. It got worse and worse and worse: my  
20 physical state, my mental state. At one point, the  
21 Ethics Officer, her name was Sunny -- I was doing errands  
22 for her because they didn't know what to do with me.  
23 So, they were just keeping me with the Ethics Officer  
24 and giving me little chores to do to watch me.

1           She asked me if I would just help her to go to the  
2           airport because they had a Scientologist who was leaving  
3           Scientology and they knew that his wife would want to  
4           leave with him. And they had to physically restrain  
5           her at the airport, and could I help with this. It was  
6           a stupid thing to aske me. My -- I guess she realized  
7           it soon after and said, "Well, never mind. I think we  
8           have enough people." So, I knew at this point that they  
9           would physically restrain me, and I had a feeling that  
10          something really bad would happen if I tried to blow  
11          again.

12          So, I decided to say anything that I had to say  
13          to leave. I said that I was -- I was -- it was my  
14          case. I said -- and I finally said the right thing to  
15          leave. I said, "I decided that I need more NOTS audit-  
16          ing. And my case is in such bad shape that I can't do  
17          it while I'm in the Sea Org. I'm chronically ill, so  
18          I don't really fit the requirements here. So, I'm  
19          going to go home and I'll just sell my business and  
20          I'm going to come back to Flag and I'm going to buy  
21          my NOTS auditing." So, this obviously was the right  
22          thing to say at the time.

23          I went to see the Registrar. He gave me an esti-  
24          mate of \$20,000.00. I said, "That'll be a breeze." I

1       said, "My business is worth more than that. I'll get  
2       the money very quickly." At that point, I was able to  
3       leave with no one stopping me.

4               It took me a couple of weeks to recuperate when  
5       I got back to New York. I -- it took me about two weeks  
6       before I could function normally, and I had the effects  
7       for probably a long time.

8               I'd like to describe after lunch what happened  
9       after that. But basically, that's when I left the org.

10              MR. LeCHER: Thank you very much. It's been very  
11       enlightening. I'm glad you're here and you're doing a  
12       wonderful job, and I hope you're not too nervous.

13              Come back after lunch around two o'clock and we'll  
14       continue with our discussion.

15              This meeting is now recessed until two.

16                               (Whereupon, the luncheon recess was  
17                               taken.)

18  
19                               Afternoon Session

20  
21              MR. LeCHER: Good afternoon, ladies and gentlemen.  
22       Welcome back to the Clearwater City Commission Hearing  
23       with reference to Scientology.

24              Again, we're here on our second day, and starting

1 May -- Monday, the Scientologists will have the equal  
2 opportunity that the city has had up to this point to  
3 present their side of the issue and, also, their wit-  
4 nesses.

5 We are back in session and we are interviewing  
6 now Lori Taverna. And Lori has been speaking earlier  
7 today, this morning. She has specifically been speaking  
8 about Clearwater.

9 I would like to have you continue your remarks. I  
10 would prefer that you keep it, if possible, specifically,  
11 again, to Clearwater with respect to what's going on  
12 there. And again, stay away from anything that might be  
13 construed as religion or faith or worship.

14 And so, Lori, would you like to start? And tell us  
15 in your own words.

16  
17 LORI TAVERNA, Resumed.

18 MS. TAVERNA: Okay.

19 What I'm going to do now is refer to my notes and  
20 fill in anything --

21 MR. LeCHER: Sure.

22 MS. TAVERNA: -- that I left out earlier.

23 Specifically, as to the living quarters at the  
24 Fort Harrison -- or how it was to be there as a student

1 or as an auditor: I mentioned that it was very over-  
2 crowded, there's ten bunks in a room. There were also  
3 many bugs in the room. There were roaches; there were  
4 ants on the sheets. There was -- I don't know what it  
5 is. It's a very large bug that looked like a roach that  
6 would fly around the room regularly.

7 MR. LeCHER: I think they're called palmetto bugs.

8 MS. TAVERNA: Well, I've never seen those before.

9 MR. LeCHER: We all know them.

10 MS. TAVERNA: Okay.

11 Also, there was one bathroom for ten people. To  
12 get ready in the morning was very hassled.

13 When I was at Clearwater when I was a student and  
14 when I was an auditor, we had thirty minutes to eat where  
15 we had to -- I was taking courses over at the other bank  
16 building, and we had to run to the Fort Harrison, then,  
17 we had to wait on the line with, sometimes, thirty  
18 people, get our food and eat it, and be back on post for  
19 roll call in thirty minutes. So, most of the time we  
20 didn't eat or we had indigestion. That part of it is  
21 very upsetting. If you were late, even a minute, you had  
22 to go to Ethics and have handling or do conditions to  
23 make amends for being late.

24 I'd like to speak a little bit about the Medical

1           Officer. I mentioned times that I was ill. I did see  
2           the Medical Officer a few times.

3           The first time I saw him was when I arrived in  
4           Clearwater. I was told that I had to get a shot, and I  
5           said, "What was it for?" And he said it was a hepatitis  
6           shot. And I said, "Well, why do I have to get this?"  
7           And he said because I just came from Los Angeles and at  
8           the Los Angeles Organization there was an epidemic of  
9           hepatitis. So, anyone arriving from Los Angeles had to  
10          get this.

11          At first I objected. I -- you know, I don't take  
12          that much medicine and I didn't know really what it was.  
13          But I agreed and I had a shot from the Medical Officer.

14          When you're on NOTS, you also -- NED for OTs  
15          auditing, people are required to take certain vitamins.  
16          You have to take B 1. I think it was five hundred milli-  
17          grams - I'm not sure - which I think is very large. And  
18          you also had to have three or four glasses of something  
19          called Calmag. This is calcium magnesium, and you have  
20          to drink this. This is something for your nerves, which  
21          is like a natural tranquilizer to keep you destimulated, as  
22          they call it, during processing.

23          I had a bad reaction to both of them. I had night-  
24          mares from the B 1. It was an overdose of vitamins. But



1 all people were required to do this.

2 One instance that I disagreed with when I was there  
3 was there was a little boy who was ill. He was one of  
4 the children of the staff members at the Fort Harrison.  
5 And I was called in to help to audit this little boy  
6 because I had a good reputation as an auditor.

7 So, I went there and I found this little boy. He  
8 had a hundred and five fever. He was unable to move his  
9 head and his neck. I think it was like symptoms of  
10 meningitis or something like that. He was very flushed  
11 and feverish. And the case supervisor was the person  
12 who directs you in auditing and had instructed me to run  
13 some processes on him, basically, to handle any upsets.

14 And I went there with my E-Meter and I had this  
15 little boy pick up the cans; he was too weak to hold the  
16 cans. So, I just didn't do it. I said, "This child is  
17 too sick to receive auditing. I think he should go to a  
18 doctor." The Medical Officer said, "Well" -- he had a  
19 medical book in which he looked up certain things. And  
20 he said, "I don't feel that he's in any danger. We'll  
21 see how he is tomorrow."

22 So, he didn't -- the boy didn't see a doctor. I  
23 don't know if he did after I left. I never went back,  
24 but I had that little boy on my mind. And I felt it was

1           improper handling to audit this -- a kid who was sick.

2           Oh, one thing I neglected to say before: After  
3           I left Flag unauthorized and came back, I was then  
4           guarded. I was watched constantly. I felt that I had  
5           to sneak to make a phone call. I was also told that I  
6           was not allowed to speak to my sisters. Two of them  
7           there were not allowed to communicate. And I was moved  
8           out of the room.

9           So, my sister was now at the Gray Moss Inn, and I  
10          had to move into a dorm with other Scientologists because  
11          I guess they didn't trust me to be out of the building  
12          because I had already run away one time. So, I actually  
13          snuck out a few times at two in the morning to go across  
14          the street to talk to my sister, Rosie. And this was  
15          like a high crime.

16          We weren't allowed to communicate because we had  
17          what they called mutual upset; in other words, we would  
18          conspire, like, I would tell her what was bothering me  
19          and it would stir up a conspiracy. So, for maybe a month  
20          or so, I was not allowed to speak to my sister.

21          And, also, after I came back, the first night before  
22          we got separated, a Scientologist was sent to our room  
23          at the Gray Moss Inn to guard us during the night while  
24          we were sleeping, which --

1 MR. LeCHER: Go at you?

2 MS. TAVERNA: Excuse me?

3 MR. LeCHER: Go at you, you're saying?

4 MRS. GARVEY: Guard.

5 MS. TAVERNA: Guard.

6 MR. LeCHER: Guard?

7 MS. TAVERNA: Yeah.

8 When I -- she came into the room and she happened  
9 to be a friend of mine who I knew from New York. And I  
10 said -- I convinced her finally that I wasn't going to  
11 run away again, and I didn't. I promised her I wouldn't.  
12 She said her assignment was to guard us and stay in the  
13 room during the night so we wouldn't leave.

14 I felt sorry for her, because I knew if I did leave  
15 after I promised her that she would have some sort of  
16 punishment. And I didn't plan on running away again  
17 anyway. But they did guard us.

18 When I was at the Fort Harrison, there was a thing  
19 called the RPF, which is the Rehabilitation Project  
20 Force. I never felt good about this. There's a lot of  
21 things in Scientology that I never felt good about. I  
22 saw them and kind of just didn't understand them, especi-  
23 ally, when I saw some of my friends in this RPF, very  
24 nice, good people.

1           One day they would be fine and smiling and, then --  
2           a good friend of mine, the next day, she was in this  
3           RPF. She was -- everyone in it has to wear blue. They  
4           wear blue shorts and shirts. They're not allowed to  
5           speak to anyone. They had to always run; you're never  
6           allowed to stop. If you stopped running, you're punished  
7           or put into something more severe, which is called the  
8           RPF's RPF, if you break the rules. That's something that  
9           most Scientologists don't know about. I didn't know that  
10          much about it at the time.

11          But all I know is what I saw. I saw a few people  
12          who looked very sick. One woman had sores all over her  
13          body, open sores. I went into my friend. I asked her  
14          if I'm allowed to speak to her. She said, "You can speak  
15          to your friend, but in the RPF they're not allowed to communi-  
16          cate to anyone outside the RPF."

17          So, I went to her, and she kept her head down.  
18          And when I addressed her, I said -- her eyes were all  
19          swollen, she had been crying. And I said, "What  
20          happened?" She said she couldn't talk about it, and  
21          she said -- she called me "Sir." As a matter of fact,  
22          this is the person who recruited me for that Operations  
23          Z, a very bright, beautiful, young girl. And in the RPF,  
24          if anyone speaks to you, you have to address them as

1 "Sir." And I felt very upset for her. I cried, thinking  
2 that she was calling me "Sir."

3 But she just said, "It's going to be fine," you  
4 know, through tears in her eyes. And I don't know the  
5 details of why she got in there.

6 People in the RPF are not allowed to eat with the  
7 rest of the people. After we finished eating, they would  
8 come and eat whatever, you know, was left, you know,  
9 same food, though, but never sit at the table with  
10 another person. They're considered a lower -- you know,  
11 a lower level. And the purpose of it is to rehabilitate  
12 them because they have become so degraded and so psychotic  
13 that they have to be separated and go through this par-  
14 ticular physical work. They work for half a day and  
15 get audited or processed for half a day until they come  
16 up to the next level.

17 Another thing I've never felt good in Scientology  
18 about is the care of children. I have three children  
19 and I've always given them my full attention. At the  
20 Fort Harrison, they had a -- I never had my children at  
21 the Fort Harrison. But it happened to be right down-  
22 stairs from the Medical Officer. So, whenever I would  
23 go there, I would glance in and see the children.

24 Once I heard a child screaming very loudly. I went

1 down just from instinct, you know, and I walked into  
2 where they keep the children. There was a toddler, he  
3 was all alone. His diaper was falling off and he was  
4 screaming. There was no adult there. I just picked him  
5 up and, you know, patted him a little bit.

6 Several times there were other children wandering  
7 around fighting with each other, you know, the way chil-  
8 dren do. It was right next to the parking lot in the  
9 back, and -- but they did have a gate there so the chil-  
10 dren wouldn't go out. But many times I saw them -- they  
11 were kind of just left there. I can't say I know exactly  
12 how they were cared for, but from what I saw they were  
13 dirty. The room I went into was a mess; there were no  
14 sheets on the beds; and there were things thrown all  
15 around the room.

16 As far as education goes, in Scientology for all  
17 the years I've been in, there has been a put down of  
18 education by Ron Hubbard, by Scientologists. The school  
19 system is suppressive. A Scientologist has said to me  
20 several times, "You're not sending your kids to college,  
21 are you?" And I said, "Of course, I am." And she  
22 said, "How could you do that," as if I was committing a  
23 crime.

24 As recently as last week, my daughter has a friend

1       who's a Scientologist - she was at her house - and the  
2       mother -- Debbie mentioned when she goes to college --  
3       she's thirteen now. And the mother said, who's a  
4       Scientologist, "Debbie, why would you want to go to  
5       college?" And she said, "Because I want to learn about  
6       this and that." And she said, "Ron Hubbard has the  
7       greatest technology in the world. You don't need  
8       college; college is a waste of time." She said, "What  
9       do you want to learn?" She said, "Well, I want to learn  
10      about the business world." She said, "Even if I don't  
11      have my own business, I want to be smart so I can under-  
12      stand it." She said, "Ron Hubbard has the greatest  
13      business technology and managing/administrative technology  
14      there is and you can get it in Scientology. You should be  
15      taking your courses and going clear."

16             So, education is discouraged very much in Scien-  
17      tology. It's a suppressive organization that doesn't  
18      really teach you anything. And as long as you have your  
19      Scientology training, you're going to make it in the  
20      world.

21             My daughter was in the Sea Org.; she was in there  
22      for seven months while I was training here in Clearwater.  
23      She had no schooling at all. She said she went to school,  
24      I think, three times. She had to work from eight in the

1 morning till ten-thirty at night seven days a week. And  
2 they said there was no time for school.

3 She was told that she would have weekends off in  
4 the Sea Org. This never happened. She got Saturday  
5 afternoon off for three hours because stats were up. She  
6 soon realized that this was not what -- she was in the  
7 wrong place. I wasn't there, but she was living with my  
8 brother-in-law, so she never actually lived in the  
9 quarters with the other children.

10 My daughter has gone to Scientology schools since  
11 she was born, literally. She went to a nursery and, then,  
12 she had all her education up until she was eleven years  
13 old in a Scientology school. I discovered -- well, I  
14 guess, she was ten -- up until ten. I discovered when  
15 she was ten or eleven that she didn't know math. I felt  
16 very negligent. I assumed -- she's a brilliant girl.  
17 She was reading at three years old, very mature. Somehow  
18 it came out that she didn't know the two times table.  
19 Nothing.

20 I got very, very upset. I went to the school, and  
21 they begged me not to take her out. They told me that  
22 the GO would pounce on her; that was the words that they used.  
23 The Ability School was run -- I don't know the details,  
24 but the GO had some authority over the way the school was



1 run. And the people who ran it said, you know, "This  
2 would be very bad if a Scientologist took their child  
3 out." I said, "I don't care what it looks like. My  
4 children -- I want my children to have an education  
5 and this is absurd."

6 I took her out and I put her in public school. She  
7 immediately went up to fifth grade math. She was --  
8 just -- she's very bright. She was never taught anything  
9 in the school. The school was run like a Scientology  
10 organization; they had Ethics conditions. The children  
11 were also taught about the enemy in the outside world.  
12 Scientology children have an attitude that it's the  
13 suppressives out there and Scientologists.

14 They've often said things to my daughter about going into  
15 the WOG world. A WOG is someone not in Scientology. And  
16 when they heard she was going to public school, they  
17 frightened her. They -- my daughter cried for three  
18 days because she thought they were going to kill her in  
19 public school. And since then, she's out of Scientology.  
20 She knows everything that I do now.

21 But basically, the -- education is totally put  
22 down in Scientology.

23 When I was in Los Angeles recently, visiting my  
24 sister, I helped out in a Scientology private school. It

1 was called Renaissance School. I'm not an official  
2 teacher, but I was helping because they didn't have  
3 anyone. There was a boy there who was nine years old.  
4 He had been brought up in the Sea Org.; his parents both  
5 were in and he was born in. He -- I understand from the  
6 owners of the school that he spent most of his nine years  
7 in the Children's RPF. I don't know what that is, but I  
8 assume it's the same thing as the adult RPF.

9 This boy couldn't read one word at nine years old.  
10 And I taught him how to read his first word, and I taught  
11 him his first sentence. And he just -- he was crying  
12 that he could read one sentence. He was nine years old,  
13 and he was born in Scientology and sent to Scientology  
14 schools.

15 I also know that the children have a lot of ill-  
16 nesses. I don't know -- I didn't see it, but my sister  
17 was there. And the children in the child care org. in  
18 Los Angeles -- a friend called my sister and said, "I  
19 need help. My son is very ill and I don't know what to  
20 do."

21 My sister went there and her friend's son had a  
22 fever and was crying. His job was to be the nanny; he  
23 was to watch the younger children and he had a high fever  
24 She went to the Medical Officer and she said, "This boy

1 is sick; he needs a doctor." He said, "He's not sick;  
2 I examined him. And he's supposed to be on post." He  
3 said, "There's nothing wrong with him." He said, "I  
4 already know what it is. The children have herpes."

5 And my sister walked in and she saw infants -- she  
6 saw babies on the floor. They had sores all over their  
7 face and mouth. And my sister went into a rage. She  
8 went in and she said, "I want these children taken care  
9 of." And the Medical Officer said, "Well, who are you?  
10 What are you doing here?" He said, "As a matter of fact,  
11 I won't talk to you anymore." He said, "We don't have  
12 any money for a doctor."

13 So, she said, "Well, you get the money." And then,  
14 finally, my sister got so mad, she said, "Well, if you  
15 don't do something about these children right now, I'm  
16 calling the Board of Health." When she said that, she  
17 got a lot of attention: GO people, "Do you realize what  
18 you just said?" She was declared PTS, threatening to  
19 embarrass or sue Scientology, one of those categories.

20 The Medical Officer called her -- he said, "You  
21 just committed a suppressive act." She said, "No. You  
22 committed the suppressive act." She said, "I want these  
23 children cared for."

24 So, I know this goes on. I've seen it. I've seen

1 many sick children in Scientology, and it's looked at  
2 that you should be on post. They don't need a doctor.

3 The Medical Officer sometimes acts as a doctor.  
4 I've never seen them administer medicine, but it's more  
5 neglect than administering. They don't get the proper  
6 medical care.

7 Something I neglected to say: When we first arrived  
8 at the Fort Harrison in Clearwater here, you had to get  
9 security clearance before you're allowed on the -- to be  
10 officially here or to get -- to be on NOTS. It takes  
11 about a week. They check your life; they check every-  
12 thing.

13 And the person in charge was Skip Henson at the  
14 time. And you have to get -- read some beginning indoc-  
15 trination of how to respond if anyone in Clearwater asks  
16 you a question. There are certain set answers that you  
17 should give if a resident happens to say, "What are you  
18 doing here? What happens at the Fort Harrison?"

19 I don't remember what they are exactly, but it's  
20 something to the effect that "If anyone asks you any-  
21 thing, 'I'm here for religious counseling.'" It was  
22 something like that, but I can't remember.

23 When they had rallies, you were told that the  
24 mayor was a suppressive person, that the officials in

1 Clearwater were suppressive. They were trying to  
2 stop -- stamp out Scientology. We had GO briefings.  
3 When they had some sort of rally here, we were instructed.  
4 I think the woman's name was Nancy. She was giving the  
5 briefing.

6 MR. LeCHER: Nancy Risi?

7 MS. TAVERNA: Yes. She gave the briefing.

8 And she said that "If any reporters or anyone comes  
9 to you, don't answer any questions about anything. Refer  
10 them to me."

11 We were also instructed -- every time some type  
12 of official would come into the Fort Harrison, students  
13 were given a little slip or a form: "The Fire  
14 Commissioner is coming," or "Some lawyers are going to  
15 be here," "Some WOGs are coming," you know, something  
16 like this. "Dress a certain way tomorrow because so and  
17 so is coming." We always had warning before any type  
18 of inspection was done. They would clear up whatever  
19 that particular thing was.

20 MR. LeCHER: A WOG is an outsider, again?

21 MS. TAVERNA: A WOG is a person who is not in  
22 Scientology, so that's how they refer to someone like  
23 that.

24 I think that I covered most of my notes here.

1 MR. LeCHER: We don't even know where to start,  
2 you've said so many startling things.

3 One thing that struck me, though, was herpes.  
4 Isn't that a venereal disease?

5 MS. TAVERNA: There's two types. My sister took  
6 the child and paid for it herself; she took the child  
7 to the doctor. He was given antibiotics. She said it  
8 was a virus-type of herpes rather than a venereal --  
9 they're two different things.

10 MRS. GARVEY: There are cold sores --

11 MR. CALDERBANK: We used to get --

12 MR. LeCHER: It was diagnosed, though?

13 MS. TAVERNA: Yes. It was diagnosed by the doctor.

14 MR. LeCHER: All right.

15 While you were deeply involved in all these things,  
16 did you still believe in the incredible background of  
17 L. Ron Hubbard?

18 MS. TAVERNA: I believed totally in L. Ron Hubbard  
19 until recently. I felt very sorry for him; I felt  
20 deep compassion. I felt that I was trying -- I had  
21 tried for seventeen years to make the organization sane,  
22 and I said, "If I feel this way, what must Ron Hubbard  
23 be going through?" And I felt a devotion to him to try  
24 to make it sane. I felt that he was one of the greatest

1 men that ever, ever lived, and I wanted to help him up  
2 until recently.

3 Even after Clearwater I said, "If Ron Hubbard only  
4 knew." As I said, up until recently.

5 MR. LeCHER: I don't know if I can ask this, but:  
6 Generally, what is the ultimate thing you expected with  
7 the new breakthrough? Would that be an exhibit of faith?  
8 You were looking for this new breakthrough which kept  
9 you going, apparently, in this organization.

10 MR. FLYNN: It would probably be wiser to --

11 MR. LeCHER: I will ignore it and forget I asked  
12 the question. And I will stick to things that happened  
13 in Clearwater.

14 You said there's a cramming hold. What is a  
15 cramming hold, what was his name, and where was the  
16 office, this cramming hold office?

17 MS. TAVERNA: What was that --

18 MR. LeCHER: Cramming --

19 MS. TAVERNA: -- the second word?

20 MR. LeCHER: Hold.

21 MS. TAVERNA: Hole?

22 MR. LeCHER: Cramming office. Where was it and  
23 who manned the cramming office?

24 MS. TAVERNA: The cramming office was right next to

1 where the pool is. You had to go alongside the pool  
2 and, then, go in the back. It was in the back of the  
3 cabana-type rooms. That's where the cramming was.

4 MR. LeCHER: Would you know if that still exists?

5 MS. TAVERNA: Cramming always exists in Scientology  
6 in every organization in the world.

7 MR. LeCHER: Again, for the benefit of those that  
8 are new and for the audience: Again, what is cramming?

9 MS. TAVERNA: Cramming is the department in Scien-  
10 tology which is correction. If someone doesn't apply  
11 the technology properly, if it appears that they have  
12 misunderstood words, cramming is supposed to find the  
13 misunderstood and handle it so the person can do it  
14 correctly.

15 There's something I want to say about cramming  
16 which I forgot to say, if I could just add it.

17 MR. LeCHER: If it's not -- doesn't have to do with  
18 faith or religious ceremony, I want to hear it.

19 MS. TAVERNA: Yes.

20 This doesn't -- has to do with the treatment of  
21 people there by the Cramming Officer. I went in there -  
22 and this is one of my first few visits to cramming -  
23 there was a woman who was probably about sixty-five years  
24 old, she was a NOTS auditor, she was there for training,



1       which is admirable because people who become auditors  
2       want to help people. She apparently made some kind of  
3       mistake; she was sitting there; she was trembling; she  
4       had tears in her eyes.

5               The Cramming Officer - his name was Spike Bush -  
6       who, in my opinion -- never mind. Well, his name is  
7       Spike Bush. He was standing there -- he was sitting  
8       down, she was in front of him. He was pounding the table.  
9       She said, "But" -- she was stuttering. She said, "But  
10      I thought -- but I thought." He said, "Don't think."  
11      He said, "That's your problem, you think." He pounded  
12      the table at least six times while he was screaming at  
13      the top of his lungs, "Don't think."

14             And I -- okay.

15             MR. LeCHER: Well, if you want to continue, I --  
16      did you ever -- after fifteen years, didn't you ever feel  
17      like a slave or indentured servant? I mean, you're  
18      working for \$10.00 a week. And how did you exist and  
19      take care of your children?

20             MS. TAVERNA: No. For all the years that I was in,  
21      I never felt like a slave or that I was working for  
22      nothing. When I was on staff, I was married at the time -  
23      this is before my divorce - so my husband was taking care  
24      of the bills. My children came with me when they were

1 young. I always brought them with me and I had them in  
2 a nursery. And I always went home by three o'clock in  
3 the beginning when my children were little. And I had  
4 a home and I had a normal life, not like many Scientolo-  
5 gists who had no other income.

6 And in later years, I worked in a mission, which  
7 paid \$125.00 a week and I only worked till six o'clock.  
8 So, I had other businesses at nights or on the weekends  
9 where I would do sales or something like that.

10 The only time that I have ever felt I was treated  
11 not as a human being was at Clearwater in '79. Before  
12 that, I felt that -- it didn't matter if I got \$3.00  
13 or \$10.00; it had nothing to do with the money at the  
14 time. It had to do with just helping to make a better  
15 world. It didn't matter.

16 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

17 You said in Clearwater, when you were here, they  
18 were collecting about a million dollars a week, and I  
19 think you may have mentioned in one week there was 2.3  
20 million dollars.

21 MS. TAVERNA: No, I don't know that. I think  
22 someone else said that.

23 MR. LeCHER: All right.

24 Well, a million dollars is a lot of money --

1 MS. TAVERNA: Yeah.

2 MR. LeCHER: -- a week.

3 Who collected it and was it in cash? And where  
4 did you put it? Did it leave the area?

5 MS. TAVERNA: I don't know anything about the  
6 finances. There were -- I know that you -- I know where  
7 the money goes. You bring it to the cashier. There's  
8 a cashier window.

9 First, you go to the Registrar; you sign up for  
10 what service you want. It costs a specific amount of  
11 money. You have to pay in advance. Then, you go to  
12 the cashier. You pay the money there however you want  
13 to pay it. They give you a receipt for your services.  
14 Then, you go start the course.

15 MR. LeCHER: With so much money coming in, such a  
16 cash flow, why was it you were fed beans and rice?

17 MS. TAVERNA: I have asked people that question,  
18 and they said, "It's very expensive to run the Fort  
19 Harrison and there's just not enough money." I felt it  
20 was absolutely absurd, and I had many questions about  
21 where the money was going.

22 MR. LeCHER: How do you feel about being denied  
23 medical treatment, you and other people that you came in  
24 contact with?

1 MS. TAVERNA: Well, I --

2 MR. LeCHER: Was that widespread?

3 MS. TAVERNA: Not getting medical treatment?

4 MR. LeCHER: Yes.

5 MS. TAVERNA: Well, you can see a doctor in Scien-  
6 tology. You could go to a doctor, but you go through  
7 the Medical Officer. In other words, he makes recommenda-  
8 tions.

9 MR. LeCHER: All right.

10 You had a Medical Officer. What was his or her  
11 qualifications? Was it a nurse or --

12 MS. TAVERNA: No.

13 The fellow who was --

14 MR. LeCHER: I'm sorry, go ahead.

15 MS. TAVERNA: The fellow who was the Medical Offi-  
16 cer when I was there - I can't remember his name - he  
17 wasn't a doctor, but he had some training of some sort.  
18 I don't know what you call it, like an aide who -- an  
19 assistant. He had some type of medical knowledge,  
20 definitely not a doctor.

21 I never met a Medical Officer who was a doctor in  
22 Scientology. It's usually just a regular staff member.  
23 It could be anyone. You don't even have to have any  
24 knowledge of medicine. Basically, you use L. Ron

1 Hubbard's policies on -- well, actually, it doesn't go  
2 even that far. He'll just determine if it needs medical  
3 attention or any -- something like that.

4 But you're never actually denied. Like, if you  
5 insist and say, "I want to see a doctor," you'll probably  
6 have to go through and convince him, because you can go.  
7 I've never been denied medical treatment.

8 MR. LeCHER: Is any labor performed at the Fort  
9 Harrison by townspeople that get paid the minimum wage  
10 or more as to what they're worth?

11 MS. TAVERNA: You mean, people hired --

12 MR. LeCHER: Like painters, plumbers --

13 MS. TAVERNA: No.

14 MR. LeCHER: -- carpenters --

15 MS. TAVERNA: I never saw anyone at the Fort  
16 Harrison --

17 MR. LeCHER: -- masons?

18 MS. TAVERNA: -- doing anything, other than  
19 Scientologists. So, I don't know. In other words,  
20 they'd hire people who have certain skills, like, if  
21 someone was a plumber, they'll try to recruit them. The --  
22 whatever other things. They have all Scientologists  
23 running the Fort Harrison, as far as I've ever known.

24 MR. LeCHER: You talked about business courses.

1           What business courses were offered for -- either for  
2           students or for someone of your age?

3           MS. TAVERNA: A business course? Well, there's --

4           MR. LeCHER: You said that the Founder knows more  
5           about business than anybody else. And I was wondering  
6           what he taught?

7           MS. TAVERNA: I'm trying to think of the names of  
8           the courses. Well, they had the Flag Executive Briefing  
9           Course, FEBC, and they had the OEC, the Organizational  
10          Executive Course I guess it's called. And in there,  
11          there are all policies on managing a business, on --  
12          administrative policies. They tell you exactly how to  
13          run an organization, how to set it up, how to make an  
14          organization board, and so forth: flow lines within an  
15          organization.

16          MR. LeCHER: Were you given any contact with the  
17          outside world while you were at Clearwater? Were you --  
18          did you make outside friends, like, go to the beach or --

19          MS. TAVERNA: No. I never spoke to anyone in  
20          Clearwater. It was kind of -- you just don't do that.  
21          No one told me I couldn't speak to anyone. It's just  
22          something you don't do; I don't know why.

23          MR. LeCHER: Where is the -- the RPF?

24          MS. TAVERNA: Yeah.

1 MR. LeCHER: Where are those people and where are  
2 they kept? Are they, you know -- do they have a separate  
3 office or how do they become -- how do you become an  
4 RPF, first of all?

5 MS. TAVERNA: Well, you are placed in the RPF for  
6 breaking the rules, for -- sort of like you'd say, in  
7 other words, for committing a crime. If you -- I can  
8 just give you examples of crimes that someone might do.

9 If your stats were very down -- I can't say. I  
10 don't have -- really, I don't have knowledge. I've seen  
11 things where it says that "So and so is assigned to the  
12 RPF." You'll get something, some kind of Ethics hearing  
13 like a Committee of Evidence where people will listen,  
14 see what your crime was, and decide if you should go in  
15 the RPF or not.

16 Certain things that are instant RPF, I think, like,  
17 having sex with someone who you're not married to. I  
18 think that would -- I'm not positive, but I think that  
19 would be RPF.

20 MR. LeCHER: That would be considered a crime?

21 MS. TAVERNA: That was -- that's definitely a  
22 crime, I know that.

23 MR. LeCHER: About these children who go to school:  
24 Didn't you find it curious that your child couldn't -

1           although she could read well - couldn't do her two times  
2           two tables or mathematic tables?

3           MS. TAVERNA: I -- it was one of the biggest shocks  
4           of my life. It -- I was -- I felt bad for my own  
5           neglect that I did assume -- I just assumed that she  
6           was in school. I was working very hard in my own busi-  
7           ness, and she was just so bright. The teacher always  
8           said she was doing fine, you know, and she was doing  
9           wonderful.

10           And you just don't go around, you know, asking  
11           the kid, you know, "What's five times" --

12           MR. LeCHER: I understand.

13           MS. TAVERNA: You know, I just assumed. It's such  
14           a natural part of learning. Until some -- she told me  
15           that she didn't want -- she didn't want to play a game.  
16           And I said, "Well, why," you know. She said, "Because  
17           I'm stupid," because there was a child much younger than  
18           her who was figuring out math in this game.

19           And she's been crying hundreds of hours since then  
20           because I immediately tried to put her into a private  
21           school that my sons went to. My sons went to one of the  
22           best schools in the city, a private school. And I wanted  
23           her to go there. And they wouldn't accept her. I didn'  
24           tell her why; I said they were too crowded. She had



1 special scores; and she was in the one percentile in  
2 math. And I'm still trying to repair her right now  
3 and get -- getting her a special tutor and, then, try  
4 to re-enter her in the private school. And I work with  
5 her everyday now an hour.

6 MR. LeCHER: Do you think there's young people  
7 there that are being raised without a minimal education  
8 that we have grown to expect in Pinellas County for our  
9 own children?

10 MS. TAVERNA: I'm sorry, could you repeat that?

11 MR. LeCHER: Do you think that there are people  
12 within Clearwater, within the Scientologist organization,  
13 that are still not getting the proper education, as was  
14 illustrated in the case of your own child?

15 MS. TAVERNA: I positively think so, but I don't  
16 know.

17 The reason I think so is because, when I was at  
18 Clearwater, I saw children very often during the day  
19 with people -- little children who were folder pages,  
20 and they would be in uniform with their shorts and lan-  
21 yards. And they would be -- they were my daughter's  
22 friends from New York who had joined the Sea Organization  
23 to come here. And they would be working during school  
24 hours, folder pages.

1 I don't know if they didn't have school. If they  
2 did, I don't know where it was. But I did see children  
3 many times during the day working.

4 MR. LeCHER: All right.

5 These young people were folding pages, you say?

6 MS. TAVERNA: Folder pages. They carried the pages  
7 of -- in other words, if you were going to audit someone,  
8 you would call for a certain folder where the records are  
9 kept and these folder pages would bring it to you -- the  
10 auditor.

11 MR. LeCHER: Sort of like a page, then?

12 MS. TAVERNA: A page to carry -- a messenger; that's  
13 what they were called, little messengers.

14 MR. LeCHER: They weren't folding pages, like pages  
15 in a book?

16 MS. TAVERNA: No, no, no. A messenger to bring  
17 folders to different locations.

18 MR. LeCHER: You were here since I have been  
19 Mayor and we've had sometimes a stormy time here. Didn't  
20 any of these other outside activities that the city or  
21 other private individuals may have done -- didn't it ever  
22 affect you or didn't you ever question what you were doing  
23 there, or maybe question the credibility of the back-  
24 ground of L. Ron Hubbard?

1 MS. TAVERNA: I definitely wondered what I was  
2 doing here when I was in Clearwater. I didn't question  
3 the credibility of Ron Hubbard; it was so embedded in me  
4 that, through all the suffering that I went through, I  
5 never once considered that L. Ron Hubbard had anything  
6 to do with it. I considered him a victim of a lot of  
7 stupid people who wouldn't listen to this good man, and  
8 I never once questioned him.

9 I -- I felt terrible about the people in Clearwater.  
10 I -- they probably had a peaceful town here and, I think,  
11 people come up and start changing things. And I -- I  
12 actually snuck out and would read the paper and I would  
13 see about infiltration into the Clearwater Sun. And I  
14 would think, I said, "Why don't they leave people alone,"  
15 you know. And I was very upset about it. But it was,  
16 like, a separate thing.

17 That was the GO. That was not my field. My field  
18 was counseling people. And I said, "If only the GO  
19 would be decent and" -- I said, "How can Clearwater be  
20 friendly toward Scientology?" I mean, if someone came  
21 into my town and started infiltrating and staging these  
22 things and dressing up as clowns, you know, I wouldn't  
23 like it, either. I was embarrassed to be a Scientologist  
24 when I was here. I felt embarrassed for Ron Hubbard.

1 I thought that these people were destroying Scien-  
2 tology by making it a mockery. And I wouldn't talk to a  
3 resident, I guess, because I would never say I was a  
4 Scientologist; I was embarrassed. Sometimes, people  
5 would go by and yell out things or throw stones, and I  
6 said, you know, "Boy, I'm embarrassed."

7 MR. LeCHER: Were you here when they -- the Scien-  
8 tologists protested or picketed the Clearwater Sun dressed  
9 up as Nazis?

10 MS. TAVERNA: I remember them dressed up as Nazis.  
11 I didn't know what they were picketing, but I saw Nazi  
12 uniforms and I -- again, I was very embarrassed and I  
13 thought it was an insane act. I think people probably --  
14 people did then think that Scientology was -- Scientolo-  
15 gists were Nazis. They didn't understand what they were  
16 doing.

17 I saw the uniforms and I was very embarrassed by it.

18 MR. LeCHER: I think most -- many other people  
19 were embarrassed for them.

20 One more question and I'll turn it over. What --  
21 what do you think your typical day was like here in  
22 Clearwater? Just give me a routine of the typical day  
23 that's not particularly difficult, not particularly easy  
24 but just a normal day at Clearwater when you were here at

1 the height of --

2 MS. TAVERNA: A student?

3 MR. LeCHER: A student.

4 MS. TAVERNA: A student would have to -- let me  
5 see, my memory is a little foggy. Most of it was horror,  
6 so I don't remember a normal day.

7 MR. LeCHER: Well --

8 MS. TAVERNA: Well, you wake up -- every day is  
9 the same as every other day, which I have now found is  
10 a very destructive thing. In other words, you wake up  
11 and you have to be at muster at -- this is now maybe  
12 eight-fifteen, eight-thirty, something like this. You  
13 must be there, and they say, "That's it." They call your  
14 name; it's very rigid, very official. Your -- muster  
15 is called and, then, you'll be given your schedule of  
16 the day: who you're auditing, what time. It's posted  
17 on the board.

18 You'll audit these people one after another. They  
19 come in and out. You might have six preclears; it's sort  
20 of like an assembly line. You finish with one, the next  
21 one's waiting. You take them in.

22 Then, you get your half hour lunch to run back and  
23 forth. You'll get: "Audit people, audit people," till  
24 ten o'clock at night.

1           You go to sleep; you wake up. It's exactly the  
2 same every day. It is just a -- I lost touch with  
3 reality when I was there, like, I really didn't know  
4 what day it was, what month it was; it didn't matter.  
5 And most of it was through severe physical pain. I  
6 just -- it was a big blur.

7           MR. LeCHER: You said, "physical pain." But you  
8 were not -- earlier, you said you were allowed to go to a  
9 doctor. And, also, another time they said you couldn't,  
10 or you implied that.

11           Am I to conclude that you could go if you could  
12 convince the Medical Officer that it was serious enough?

13           MS. TAVERNA: I didn't even think of going to a  
14 doctor; I didn't care. I didn't ask to go; I didn't --  
15 I just wanted to get out of there. I knew that once I  
16 got away, I -- I didn't need a doctor; I had to go home.

17           And when I did go home, I was in perfect health  
18 after about two weeks. I haven't had any problems with  
19 it. I mean, I wasn't chronically ill with arthritis;  
20 I mean, it hadn't bothered me in maybe eight years. It's  
21 not that I was suffering with this and I came into  
22 Scientology to handle it. I didn't care about it.

23           It was just from this undue stress that something  
24 happened to my system. So, I really never had any

1 thoughts about the doctor. I just wanted to leave.

2 MR. LeCHER: Did you ever see any skimming of the  
3 million dollars a week coming in? Did anybody try and  
4 skim or -- within the organization, or take a little bit  
5 off the top?

6 MS. TAVERNA: I have no information on the money  
7 or where it went.

8 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

9 Mr. Calderbank.

10 MR. CALDERBANK: Yeah.

11 Lori, let's talk about education. You said your  
12 daughter went to a Scientology school how long while in  
13 Pinellas County?

14 MS. TAVERNA: Oh, no, she didn't go to school here.

15 MR. CALDERBANK: She didn't?

16 MS. TAVERNA: No.

17 She went to school in New York and, then, she went  
18 to school in Los Angeles while I was training here.

19 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

20 As a Scientology school, did they have specific  
21 hours at all for education, a certain number of hours?

22 MS. TAVERNA: Yes.

23 Well, when she went to private -- it was a private  
24 Scientology school which I paid \$225.00 a month for.

1 That's where she went to in New York for most of her life.

2 When she joined the Sea Organization, she was in  
3 Los Angeles. She only went to school three times in  
4 seven months, so there was no hours for school. My  
5 nephews were in school at the time - and in the Sea Org. -  
6 and their senior told them - they were, I think, twelve  
7 and ten - he said, "We're going to give you the minimum  
8 education required by law," which happens to be two hours  
9 a day, I think. And he said, "Instead of" -- I said,  
10 "What did you learn in school?" He said he had algebra;  
11 that was the only thing he had in seven months, and he  
12 only had that a few times.

13 And his senior told him that "After a couple of  
14 weeks, we're going to use these two hours for your  
15 Scientology training." He said, "You won't have to go  
16 to school at all."

17 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

18 Did -- do you have any knowledge of the education  
19 here in Clearwater for the children?

20 MS. TAVERNA: No, I don't.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

22 On your medical -- on the Medical Officer, you  
23 said that you made it to a doctor here in town who pre-  
24 scribed you certain medication, certain routines for you



1 to get better; is that correct?

2 MS. TAVERNA: Yes.

3 MR. CALDERBANK: Once you got back to the Scien-  
4 tology headquarters, were you allowed to complete that  
5 treatment?

6 MS. TAVERNA: I didn't -- I wasn't prescribed any  
7 medication. It was basically bed rest, and I was to walk  
8 an hour a day and hot baths three times a day.

9 MR. CALDERBANK: Were you -- did you do that?

10 MS. TAVERNA: No, I didn't. I did it maybe two  
11 days. And I don't know why, but I never did it. I can't  
12 remember. I was -- it's a -- that period is very foggy  
13 because I -- it's all blurred together. I know I didn't  
14 take walks.

15 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

16 MS. TAVERNA: I took a walk once and the Ethics  
17 Officer came with me.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: Do you remember who gave you the  
19 shot - what the name of the Medical Officer was - when  
20 you came to Clearwater?

21 MS. TAVERNA: I've been trying to remember his  
22 name and I just can't. I never really -- I guess I did  
23 know his name at the time. But it would be on record, I  
24 guess, who was the Medical Officer in 1979 of July or

1 August.

2 MR. CALDERBANK: Did you see any certificates on  
3 the wall from the state or the county, either for  
4 nursing or as an education for a doctor when this person  
5 gave you the shot?

6 MS. TAVERNA: No.

7 MR. CALDERBANK: Did he --

8 MS. TAVERNA: I asked him if he was a doctor and  
9 he said, "No."

10 MR. CALDERBANK: And he gave you the shot?

11 MS. TAVERNA: Yes.

12 MR. CALDERBANK: Is this a common practice that the  
13 Medical Officer would do?

14 MS. TAVERNA: I never heard of it before. But every  
15 person who came to Clearwater got the shot; it's the first  
16 stop on their routing form. But I never heard of it  
17 before Clearwater.

18 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

19 While you were at Fort Harrison, there are exits  
20 to and from the hotel. Were they clearly marked? Do  
21 you remember markings "Exit" or "Fire"?

22 MS. TAVERNA: I think so. It was once ordered  
23 that there was an alarm on it and never to use that door.  
24 It said, "Exit." And I think if you opened it up some

1 alarm went off.

2 MR. CALDERBANK: Were there any instructions in  
3 front of the door?

4 MS. TAVERNA: I don't clearly remember.

5 MR. CALDERBANK: Do you remember any trash or  
6 rubbish laying around or tight quarters that would  
7 obstruct fire personnel or block exits to and from the  
8 building?

9 MS. TAVERNA: Well, I would say, tight quarters  
10 that -- I would think, it's my opinion, that, if there was  
11 a fire, with how many people were in each room, it would  
12 be very, very hectic trying to get out of the building,  
13 because each room had ten people. It's a very small room.  
14 The hallways were very, very narrow.

15 I hadn't thought about it when I was there, but  
16 looking at it now, it would probably be chaos.

17 MR. CALDERBANK: How would you characterize the  
18 living conditions there? Would you characterize them  
19 as safe and clean and sanitary or unsanitary and  
20 unhealthy?

21 MS. TAVERNA: I would classify it as unsanitary and  
22 very, very uncomfortable. With ten people in the room  
23 in the middle of the summer with no air conditioners and  
24 a lot of bugs crawling around, it was very, very

1 uncomfortable and unsanitary.

2 MR. LeCHER: One bathroom?

3 MS. TAVERNA: One bathroom in the room, and we  
4 had to be on post at eight o'clock. It was very diffi-  
5 cult to take a shower and find the right time to do what-  
6 ever you had to do in the bathroom.

7 MR. CALDERBANK: Now, was this herpes outbreak  
8 here in Clearwater?

9 MS. TAVERNA: No. This was in Los Angeles.

10 MR. CALDERBANK: Do you have any knowledge of  
11 hepatitis -- was there any hepatitis outbreak at Fort  
12 Harrison while you were there?

13 MS. TAVERNA: I don't know. I didn't hear about  
14 it.

15 MR. CALDERBANK: Okay.

16 On the -- you were talking about the policy of  
17 bringing people back or the RPF, et cetera. Did you ever  
18 see anybody restrained or held against their will?

19 Did you ever hear of anybody held or brought back?

20 MS. TAVERNA: I'm trying to think.

21 I know -- I've positively heard of people being  
22 gotten and brought back, positively.

23 MR. CALDERBANK: Is this common knowledge?

24 MS. TAVERNA: Yes.

1 MR. CALDERBANK: If you left, you would be brought  
2 back?

3 MS. TAVERNA: This is accepted. This is in the  
4 bulletin or policy. I think it's called Blown Students.  
5 It's in one of the training -- one of the policies  
6 concerning -- it's very -- it's not secret; it's out in  
7 the open. And I'm a trained supervisor and I studied  
8 it and checked out on this material where it says, "If  
9 a student blows, you're to do such and such -- call  
10 them."

11 If they don't come in, you're to go to their home,  
12 physically, and bring them back. This is common know-  
13 ledge to Scientologists.

14 MR. CALDERBANK: How much money did you pay while  
15 you were a Scientologist to the organization, approxi-  
16 mately?

17 MS. TAVERNA: Well, in all these years -- when I  
18 was -- it wasn't as expensive when I came in 1965. I  
19 would have to just guess. In services, I probably ten --  
20 \$10,000.00 to fifteen thousand. In traveling expenses  
21 and living expenses for myself and my three children  
22 in England for six months, in California from England,  
23 I would say, maybe \$30,000.00 I've spent. In loss of  
24 business, times that I left to go to this Ops 2 and

1 everything else, maybe \$50,000.00, I would say, of money  
2 lost.

3 MR. CALDERBANK: Out of the services you paid for,  
4 did you ever think of it as a donation or did you pay  
5 specifically for a service?

6 MS. TAVERNA: No. There's no such thing as a  
7 donation in Scientology for a service. The only donation  
8 would be something to the --. I don't know what they call  
9 it, but I've donated to it many times, the legal fund.  
10 And I thought I was helping people who were being victi-  
11 mized by the government. They would always call me up  
12 because I would always give them \$50.00, you know, because  
13 they knew I worked and had some money.

14 But that's the only donation I know of in Scien-  
15 tology. It's -- no one has ever mentioned the word to  
16 me. I've never heard it mentioned to any person who came  
17 in for a service. It's what course you want; this  
18 costs -- it costs this much money. You must pay for your  
19 course in full, specifically the amount that it lists on  
20 the card. And then, you can start your service.

21 MR. CALDERBANK: What made you take the service?  
22 Why would you spend \$15,000.00 for the services?

23 MS. TAVERNA: Well, it isn't a -- see, when I  
24 came in, I didn't come in and spend \$15,000.00. The most

1 I ever paid at one time -- I paid for every level they  
2 had. In those days, for all the OT levels, it cost a  
3 little over \$2,000.00, which now would cost a few hundred  
4 thousand dollars, maybe. So, that's the largest amount  
5 of money I ever paid, which I figured at the time --  
6 the thing they used for promotion was that for the price  
7 of a car, at twenty -- at that time, twenty something  
8 hundred dollars, you can have eternal freedom or spiritual  
9 freedom.

10 It seemed so ridiculous. Why go buy a car when  
11 you can gain all this that was promised. It didn't seem  
12 like a large amount of money. So, I never paid these  
13 large sums. I took a course at \$500.00.

14 I mainly audited and was a staff member. I think  
15 I was mainly interested in helping other people. I  
16 didn't receive much auditing. I've had very little  
17 auditing in Scientology. I didn't feel the need for it.  
18 I've been in relatively good shape and I didn't really  
19 require much auditing.

20 MR. CALDERBANK: Did you ever tell people while  
21 you were auditing them that it would not cure their  
22 specific sicknesses and that it had no medical basis?

23 MS. TAVERNA: I didn't as an auditor. But it  
24 states on the E-Meter that "This does not cure illness."

1 And I think, when people sign up, they have to sign  
2 something that "I'm not here to cure a specific illness."

3 MR. CALDERBANK: That's all.

4 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Berfield.

5 MR. BERFIELD: I have just a couple of questions  
6 here.

7 You spoke very highly of Mr. Hubbard. I take it  
8 that you do not believe in him any longer?

9 MS. TAVERNA: No, I don't.

10 MR. BERFIELD: What about his doctrines and philo-  
11 sophies? Do you still have confidence in them?

12 MS. TAVERNA: No, I don't.

13 MR. BERFIELD: If you were to take some of these  
14 books and read them now, how would you look upon them?

15 MS. TAVERNA: I have done that. I have read over  
16 some of the material which was, I suppose, like a bible  
17 to me. And I found out some very fascinating things.

18 I have gone through tremendous emotional upset  
19 in the last few months trying to get my mind straight  
20 from thinking for seventeen years -- it's very difficult.  
21 And I wanted to:

22 I picked up some of the books and I looked at some  
23 of the policies, and it's like reading something that  
24 I've never read before. The interpretation that I put



1 on it was my own ideas. I thought it meant what I  
2 wanted it to mean. Looking at things now, it says that  
3 if a person disagrees they must have a misunderstood  
4 word or something to that effect. I see the technology  
5 as totally, totally different now.

6 MR. BERFIELD: Do you -- would you envision it as  
7 being misleading to the public?

8 MS. TAVERNA: Definitely misleading.

9 MR. BERFIELD: To the point where one could call  
10 it fraud or not?

11 MS. TAVERNA: In my opinion, it is totally fraud.

12 MR. BERFIELD: Just a couple of other questions  
13 here: One of our purposes in this hearing is, needless  
14 to say, our concern with health, safety, and welfare of  
15 the people in Clearwater.

16 You mentioned these children. As a mother, the  
17 safety or the health of those children, how would you  
18 look upon that? Do you think the City of Clearwater has  
19 done a disservice to them?

20 MS. TAVERNA: I don't think I understand the  
21 question? What is it you want --

22 MR. BERFIELD: Well, are we performing our duties  
23 if these children at the Fort Harrison are going  
24 unattended?

1 MS. TAVERNA: No. I feel that attention should be  
2 put on the children in Scientology. I feel that they  
3 are -- they have no say in this. Their parents are  
4 Scientologists. The children are neglected. And I  
5 think someone should do something about it.

6 MR. BERFIELD: Mr. Calderbank also asked you a  
7 question about the number of people in a room, ten to a  
8 room. You did mention, I believe, that you had some  
9 high authority inspections.

10 Did you ever have any inspections from the Fire  
11 Marshall?

12 MS. TAVERNA: Yes, regularly.

13 MR. BERFIELD: How -- what did they say when they'd  
14 come to a room that had ten beds in it?

15 MS. TAVERNA: Oh, I never saw them come into the  
16 room ever. We were just informed that they were going  
17 to be on the premises tomorrow. I don't what they  
18 looked at. I was doing my course and my auditing. I  
19 was never in a room where they walked in.

20 MR. BERFIELD: Do you know for a fact whether or  
21 not they were given advance notice of these visitations  
22 by the various governmental agencies?

23 MS. TAVERNA: I don't know how they found out,  
24 but they knew the day -- or they knew, I don't know how

1 much before, but they always told us when it was going  
2 to happen.

3 MR. BERFIELD: You also mentioned earlier that a  
4 woman had spent somewhere in the neighborhood of two to  
5 three hundred thousand dollars on programs.

6 Do you know that for a fact?

7 MS. TAVERNA: Well, the person told me they did.  
8 I mean, I didn't see the money.

9 MR. BERFIELD: One -- I guess the last question -  
10 and I don't really know how to word this - but going on  
11 two points: Do you have any fear of retaliation from  
12 being here today?

13 MS. TAVERNA: I can say I don't know what to expect.  
14 In the beginning, when I first started this - which I  
15 haven't really explained why I'm doing this, I mean,  
16 what brought this about, which I think is significant -  
17 I was in terror. I was in absolute fear when I made my  
18 first move to find out some more information.

19 I would be cautious, I would say.

20 MR. BERFIELD: I guess the last part of this, the  
21 one that bothers me the most: While you were having  
22 your problems, do I interpret - and I'm not trying to  
23 put words in your mouth - that you felt that in the City  
24 of Clearwater there was no safe haven or no one to turn

1 to for help?

2 MS. TAVERNA: It never even entered my mind.

3 Through all the years of Scientology, it is embedded  
4 in you that you never speak to an outsider about internal  
5 problems. In other words, the technology is out. It's  
6 like a -- just a code of ethics, like, in other words,  
7 if we have a problem in Scientology and somebody is  
8 wrong, you don't go to an official because then they would  
9 think Scientology is bad, Ron Hubbard is bad.

10 So, we just don't consider things like that. I  
11 never -- it never entered my mind. I thought I had to  
12 get out through Scientology, -- I had to rout out.

13 MR. BERFIELD: So, you had to go out through the  
14 system and, then, you --

15 MS. TAVERNA: Yes. I never considered telling an  
16 outsider, because they would then not understand that  
17 Ron Hubbard was good and it's only these few people.  
18 You have to keep it secret and you keep it internal. You  
19 try to write up reports and try to protect Ron Hubbard  
20 and the organization.

21 MR. BERFIELD: Just one last one: Not to bear on  
22 your personal problems, but your divorce was caused by  
23 Scientology?

24 MS. TAVERNA: I wouldn't say it was caused by

1           Scientology. I believe it was a contributing factor  
2           because most Scientologists don't associate with WOGs.  
3           I was one of the few exceptions, that I achieved this  
4           high state and my husband was still a WOG. I was the  
5           only one in Scientology at the time, and I was known for  
6           it.

7           And people would constantly say to me, "How could  
8           you stand it? How could you stand it?" And I couldn't  
9           communicate things in Scientology terms to my husband,  
10          and I would always be with Scientologists. And I didn't  
11          create my marriage properly because I did start to con-  
12          sider him an outsider.

13          It's like -- it didn't cause it. Scientology  
14          didn't do anything to my marriage. It's my own distance  
15          that was created within it.

16          MR. BERFIELD: No further questions.

17          MR. LeCHER: You started before, and I'll ask you  
18          the question: What brought you here today?

19          MS. TAVERNA: ~~When I left Clearwater, I felt that~~

20          ~~I had just escaped with my life. I really felt that I~~  
21          had been to a hell and that I was alive again. And I  
22          just -- I knew that I would never, ever be on staff or  
23          have anything to do with Scientology again. I didn't  
24          care if I wasn't contributing anymore.

1 I said, "If it's that bad, let them fix it up."  
2 I had no intentions of doing anything against Scientology.  
3 I just wanted to stay away.

4 And then, I went recently, in November of this  
5 year - just this past November - I went to California  
6 to live with my sister. And Scientologists would con-  
7 stantly visit because that's basically the only friends  
8 they would have, the Scientologists. And I was feeling  
9 good, standing very well thought of, and they kept telling  
10 me stories.

11 And finally, I couldn't stand it anymore. A par-  
12 ticular friend came over to the house - she had just  
13 received her NOTS auditing - and she came in and she  
14 said how wonderful she was feeling, that she went to a  
15 restaurant, she was eating a hamburger, and all of a  
16 sudden the hamburger started screaming at her, and then  
17 the walls started screaming. And then she said tears  
18 came out of her eyes because she felt so sorry for the  
19 other people in the restaurant because they didn't know  
20 what she knew.

21 And I got tears in my eyes, and I said, "They  
22 can't do this anymore. I want answers." And I looked  
23 at the grade chart, and I noticed that a lot of the OT  
24 levels were taken off and they were replaced with NOTS;

1 every OT level was NOTS. And it became horrifying to  
2 me.

3 I said, "I can't sit back anymore. I want answers."  
4 So, I just -- I looked through Paulette Cooper's book,  
5 Scandal -- I said, "Maybe, she'll give me a clue."  
6 Because up until then -- a Scientologist never reads  
7 anything bad about Scientology. You assume it's a lie  
8 immediately, so I was too ignorant to read it at the  
9 time.

10 I couldn't get that book. I called Reader's  
11 Digest. I looked -- and finally, I got in touch with  
12 a man named Brown McKee. And I spoke with him. He was  
13 a declared suppressive, I had heard, who was trying to  
14 save Scientology -- quote, "Suppressive Person." So,  
15 I said, "I have never talked to a Suppressive Person in  
16 seventeen years." It is a high crime; it is a terrify-  
17 ing experience. It took me two days to get up the  
18 courage to call Brown McKee.

19 I called him. He was one of the nicest people.  
20 He was in Scientology twenty-five years. As a matter  
21 of fact, he was on one of the courses I was. He's a  
22 Class 8 auditor and so forth. He had the same feelings  
23 I had all these years that something's wrong. And he --  
24 all of a sudden, I tried to find another person and

1 another person.

2 I met Eddie Walters. And we all felt -- and I saw  
3 more and more of my friends being damaged. And I said,  
4 "I want answers now. I want to know where Ron Hubbard  
5 is. I want to know who is running Scientology." I asked  
6 them at the advanced organization in Los Angeles. I  
7 said, "Who are the Board of Directors? Who is the  
8 Watchdog Committee?" This is a committee which no one  
9 knows who it is. And I couldn't get any answers.

10 And finally, I started to have thoughts about L.  
11 Ron Hubbard. I said, "Wait." I started waking up. I  
12 figured it took this time from Clearwater to be away from  
13 Scientology. I started thinking straight. And I said,  
14 "We are being audited towards more ability, more freedom,  
15 more capability to OT," which is operating being or  
16 thetan. "How could Ron Hubbard, who is more capable than  
17 any of us be more and more capable and he's hiding for  
18 fifteen years? Where is he? Why isn't he helping?  
19 Why isn't he coming forward? What" -- so, I asked the  
20 people in Scientology in the Sea Org. "Security."

21 I said, "I've been hearing 'security' for ten  
22 years. I had -- I don't understand it anymore." I  
23 said, "Security? Why doesn't he go on film and give a  
24 briefing to Scientologists in the world?" I was getting



1 more and more upset. I said, "I want answers now. Who  
2 is running this? What kind of organization is this?"  
3 I saw the crimes happening.

4 I started to -- and I also questioned: "Well, how  
5 capable is this man?" I said, "His son is not talking  
6 to him, which is L. Ron Hubbard, Jr." I never met him,  
7 but I heard -- I knew -- I said, "How could he not be  
8 talking to his own father?" We had technology to handle  
9 anyone, supposedly. His other son committed suicide.  
10 His wife is in jail. He's hiding. What kind of man am  
11 I following? What am I dedicating my life to?

12 I couldn't find the answers. And then, little by  
13 little things fell into place. And I did see documents  
14 of Ron Hubbard's past, and I had tremendous anger. My  
15 mind was boggled. I couldn't adjust my thinking of what  
16 had happened for the past seventeen years, that while  
17 I was at Clearwater Ron was -- he didn't care at all.

18 And that hatred has left, the anger has left. I  
19 have no -- I'm not on a crusade against Scientology; I  
20 have no vengeance whatsoever. I have -- I just -- I  
21 feel a responsibility to the people that I've talked to.  
22 I trained hundreds, maybe thousands, of students. They've  
23 trusted me. And they told me - even after I told them  
24 what I felt about Scientology - they said, "How? But I

1 always felt that I wanted to be like you." And they felt  
2 that I was the OT level. And I said, "No, that was me."

3 And I want any Scientologist listening to know  
4 that, that I feel a responsibility to help any Scien-  
5 tologist that I could. I don't plan to attack Scien-  
6 tology at all. I just want to finish it right here and  
7 now and say that I'm not a Scientologist and maybe help  
8 someone to at least leave room to have some free thought  
9 to consider what I'm saying, and just look and say, "Am  
10 I happy? Do I see any of Scientology being applied in  
11 life?" And then, I want to go on with my own life.

12 And, also, I want to say that I consider almost --  
13 most Scientologists that I know are some of the best  
14 people in the world. They're dedicated. They truly  
15 believe, as I did, that they're helping mankind. And I  
16 have -- they're my best friends, many of them. And they  
17 probably won't talk to me now, but they're still my best  
18 friends.

19 So, that's why I'm here. I'm here to rid Scien-  
20 tology of all the lies and end it right here.

21 MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

22 Do you have any questions, Mrs. Garvey?

23 MRS. GARVEY: Back in 1955, what was it that  
24 turned you on to this organization? Was it the background

1 of Hubbard, was it the grandiose things they promised?

2 What was it about --

3 MS. TAVERNA: The thing -- it was 1965, and the  
4 thing that got me was I was very, very impressed with  
5 Ron Hubbard. I thought that it was miraculous that one  
6 man developed something that could free mankind of all  
7 these ridiculous, irrational things and psychosomatic  
8 illness. I loved him right away. I loved him for being  
9 so courageous and going through the war and healing  
10 himself and studying in Asia for all these years just  
11 to devote his life to mankind. And I was so impressed  
12 that I loved him from the first moment.

13 And it was a very traumatic thing for me when I  
14 found out.

15 MRS. GARVEY: What were you promised? Were --  
16 they -- when you started taking some of these courses,  
17 did they promise any results for you, do you remember?

18 MS. TAVERNA: I was actually never sold auditing.  
19 In the old days -- it wasn't as bad in the earlier days.  
20 I just wanted it and came in.

21 I think part of my purpose was more to counsel  
22 people. I didn't have that many -- I didn't have any  
23 problems.

24 The thing that it promised was -- I guess I was

1 more interested in the aims of Scientology. I thought it  
2 was beautiful to be part of a group that was going to  
3 handle drugs, crime, war. I mean, it was like, "Gee,  
4 I found such a good purpose in life and my children now  
5 will have a saner world to grow up in."

6 That's why I joined. I joined just to make a  
7 better world. And I wasn't promised anything specific.  
8 You could see on the grade chart what you would attain,  
9 and I was very interested in more spiritual awareness.  
10 My main reason for coming in was that: the spiritual  
11 awareness and to understand death and what happens when  
12 you die and things like that.

13 MRS. GARVEY: You said you didn't take much audit-  
14 ing, but you did work as an auditor.

15 Did you ever tell anyone that your auditing was  
16 confidential?

17 MS. TAVERNA: That their auditing was confidential?

18 MRS. GARVEY: Were you ever told auditing is con-  
19 fidential, the information that you --

20 MS. TAVERNA: Oh, positively.

21 Every -- I mean, that is -- it's printed and you  
22 read it, you know. I don't even know where specifically.  
23 But that is very common knowledge. It's printed in a  
24 lot of places. Anything you say will, you know, be kept

1 in confidence. It's assumed and it's also printed.

2 MRS. GARVEY: Would you have continued as an  
3 auditor if you, in fact, knew that this was not going to  
4 be kept confidential?

5 MS. TAVERNA: Never.

6 One of the things that upset me and actually brought  
7 me to tears -- that I did see some information from a  
8 preclear folder that was used by the Guardian's Office.  
9 I saw the person's name and I saw all their sexual with-  
10 holds, and I just -- I cried because that was something  
11 sacred to me as an auditor, that a person could tell me  
12 anything. And to me, it was the same as a priest. And  
13 I feel that all the people that had auditing, I subjected  
14 them to harrassment. And it shocked me that -- it dis-  
15 turbed me very much.

16 MRS. GARVEY: You actually did see then an audit  
17 had been used?

18 MS. TAVERNA: Yes.

19 MRS. GARVEY: When you were told about the official  
20 visit, what are some of the things that are needed to do?  
21 Did you --

22 MS. TAVERNA: You have to dress a certain way. On  
23 certain days, it said, "No jeans." You were to be polite  
24 to any WOG.

1 MRS. GARVEY: What about anything physically in  
2 the building?

3 MS. TAVERNA: That's what I'm trying to think of.

4 MRS. GARVEY: Was anything moved? Did anything  
5 have to be put away?

6 MS. TAVERNA: I saw things being moved. I didn't  
7 do it because I wasn't a staff -- I was training or being  
8 an auditor. But I saw things being moved and shuffled.  
9 And I don't know the details on that.

10 MRS. GARVEY: All right.

11 But you do know then -- you can say, if there was  
12 going to be a fire inspection, they knew ahead of time  
13 that there was going to be a fire code inspection?

14 MS. TAVERNA: Yes, no question about that.

15 MRS. GARVEY: I see.

16 Even though our inspections are supposed to be  
17 spur of the moment, spontaneous?

18 MS. TAVERNA: Oh, I didn't know that. I thought  
19 that they announced that --

20 MRS. GARVEY: No, it's not standard practice.

21 MS. TAVERNA: Oh.. Well, then, they found out some  
22 way.

23 MRS. GARVEY: That's what I wanted to find out.

24 MR. SHOEMAKER: Commissioner, we frequently and

1 most of the time announce that we're coming down to do  
2 an inspection --

3 MRS. GARVEY: But not all the time.

4 MR. SHOEMAKER: Generally, we do. We have --

5 MR. LeCHER: We would work our way down the street,  
6 though, wouldn't we, Mr. Shoemaker? Then, by the time  
7 that you start three doors away, then, they know that  
8 you're coming?

9 MR. SHOEMAKER: That's very true.

10 MR. LeCHER: So, they're warned that way, by just  
11 looking in the neighborhood.

12 MRS. GARVEY: What were you told or what did you  
13 know about the GO Office?

14 MS. TAVERNA: Well, what I was -- what I knew of  
15 the GO Office was they were kind of the elite of Scien-  
16 tology; they were heroes; they were admired very much.  
17 I had considered going into the GO. They had tried to  
18 recruit me several times. They felt I had a good image  
19 and I could be very valuable to them. And I said,  
20 "Possibly sometime I might try it."

21 And the GO -- the purpose was to protect Scien-  
22 tology and make it safe: protect it from any enemy so  
23 myself, as an auditor, could go and counsel people  
24 without being harrassed by our so-called enemies, which

1           were numerous, mentioned all the time. I believed it  
2           totally up until recently that all these agencies are  
3           attacking us and, if it wasn't for the Guardian's Office,  
4           I wouldn't be able to be here and help people.

5           So, they were very well respected and admired.  
6           It was very secret. You never knew what they were doing.  
7           And sometimes, people were picked for a specific project  
8           and it was like an honor. And they kind of felt like a  
9           secret service guy; they would go around feeling very,  
10          very important. It was an honor to work for the GO.

11          MRS. GARVEY: You were never picked for any  
12          specific project that you were supposed to do?

13          MS. TAVERNA: I don't think I've ever done anything  
14          for the GO, other than I had mentioned that I was  
15          approached to be that agent. I never actually did GO  
16          projects.

17          MRS. GARVEY: Okay.

18          One of the things we often wonder about is: Does  
19          anyone ever hear the news? You mentioned going out  
20          and trying to read the newspaper. There is no TV, no  
21          radio, no newspapers available?

22          MS. TAVERNA: You're not --

23          MRS. GARVEY: Would you believe them if you had  
24          them?



1 MS. TAVERNA: Well, I -- I guess I wasn't as  
2 brainwashed as most because I believed what I read in  
3 the paper. But it's - I don't know the word - it's  
4 suggested that you don't read newspapers and you don't  
5 listen to the news. It is suggested that the news will  
6 always lie; it's predetermined. Don't ever, ever talk  
7 to a reporter.

8 I was in fear of reporters. I thought they were  
9 all out to get us. You're not allowed to ever discuss  
10 anything. So --

11 MR. LeCHER: I am, too.

12 MS. TAVERNA: -- it's -- no. Reporters have always  
13 been in Scientology since -- from the day I came in. We  
14 have a policy that news reporters are not allowed to take  
15 a Scientology course. As the Director of Training, I  
16 used to interview people and give them a check on the  
17 E-Meter: "Are you here for any other purpose than you  
18 state?" I could clear -- give people clearance.

19 I was petrified of these reporters who could come  
20 in and destroy us. And then, I said -- recently, I  
21 said, "Why in the world can't -- I don't see any reason.  
22 Why can't a reporter come in? What are we doing here  
23 that's illegal? I'm teaching a course; I'm saving  
24 lives," which I did. I helped people by listening

1           because I like people. I said, "Why can't a reporter  
2           come in and see what it is? How can every reporter be  
3           a Suppressive Person? This is insane."

4           But I said, "Why can't someone go on television?"  
5           I said, "I would go on television." When people were  
6           upset about Scientology, I'd tell them, "Well, that's  
7           not what it is." And they'd say, "Oh, I didn't even  
8           know that."

9           So, in Scientology, no one answers questions. If  
10          you see an interview, he'll say, "Is this true?" And  
11          they'll ask you if your mother was a Nazi. They don't  
12          answer questions. So, there's this secretiveness about  
13          the press.

14          MRS. GARVEY: Were you -- or did you ever promise  
15          refunds if you did not achieve, if you did not accomplish  
16          what was promised?

17          MS. TAVERNA: Was I personally promised or -- it's  
18          standard policy that anyone who is not satisfied with a  
19          service in Scientology, their money is promptly refunded.  
20          It's part of the auditor's code, which says, "I promise  
21          to refund any money" --

22          MRS. GARVEY: Do you know of anyone that did  
23          receive any refunds?

24          MS. TAVERNA: Very few people. I mean, I don't even

1 know if I know anyone personally.

2 I know of people who have attempted to get refunds.  
3 You have a kind of complicated routing form and you have  
4 to see a lot of people and it takes a very long time. I  
5 think some people got their money back because I -- people  
6 have been referred to as Refund Case. In those cases,  
7 it was a person who was attempting to cause a lot of  
8 trouble; in other words, it was a security risk or the  
9 person was connected to someone in the government or  
10 the parents were going to take legal action. I under-  
11 stand that -- I don't know the facts, but I understand  
12 the money was given back very promptly.

13 But if you were just an average person who came  
14 in, they'll say, "Well," you know, "write up your overts."  
15 And you'll go to cramming, you'll go to review; "Let's  
16 handle your case." And a lot of people who wanted a  
17 refund -- but it's hard to get out of that routing form.  
18 You change your mind because they found you a reason;  
19 they promised you a new process. You say, "Well, I think  
20 I'll hang around a little more."

21 So, I don't know of anyone. No one I know ever  
22 got their money back.

23 MRS. GARVEY: Did you ever have to sign a legal  
24 waiver, a promise that you'd never sue, or do you know of

1 anyone who has? Is that a standard policy?

2 MS. TAVERNA: I signed a lot of waivers, and I  
3 really don't -- I don't even know what they were. I  
4 signed bonds for \$50,000.00, \$100,000.00 that I wouldn't  
5 talk about certain things ever.

6 That I wouldn't sue? I think my sister did  
7 because, when she threatened to call the Board of Health,  
8 they made her sign something after that that she'd never  
9 sue, I think.

10 But I had to sign a lot of things. There was one  
11 that I'd like to tell about, if I could.

12 MRS. GARVEY: Go ahead, if you want to tell us  
13 about it.

14 MS. TAVERNA: Well, this has to do with Clearwater.

15 When I first joined the Sea Organization, I went  
16 to Los Angeles and I was filling out my life history,  
17 you know, my background and when I was on staff, what  
18 organizations, how long I stayed there. And I had to  
19 put something that I left the New York Organization. I  
20 was there for three years as the supervisor. I left in  
21 1975. I finished my contract, which was two and-a-half  
22 years; I stayed an extra six months.

23 And then, my boyfriend at the time, who I was going  
24 with, developed cancer. And I became very upset about

1 this, and I didn't know what to do. I was afraid of the  
2 medical profession at the time. You're told that they're  
3 suppressive: "They want to cut you up; they want to  
4 operate; the cancer's going to spread." I was frantic;  
5 I didn't know what to do.

6 A friend of mine, who happened to be a Scientolo-  
7 gist and a very, very close friend, recommended a psychic  
8 healer in Mexico. I'd never heard of a psychic healer.  
9 You know, I had been in many healing practices. But I  
10 was so desperate and in such terror -- he told me that he  
11 had a blind son, and he told me that the doctor had taken  
12 a tumor out from the back of his son's eye with his  
13 hands, with no things.

14 And with him telling me that, a Class 8 and such  
15 a good friend of mine, you know, sane-type person,  
16 stable - he wasn't one of the flaky ones who was flying  
17 in space - I -- wishful thinking, I said, "Maybe, maybe  
18 this is true." And I went to Mexico. And my boyfriend  
19 didn't go to -- he went to the doctor. The doctor wanted  
20 to do a biopsy, and we said, "No, no." We went to  
21 Mexico.

22 When I went there, I walked into the office and  
23 I was shocked. I felt that I was back in Scientology  
24 advanced organizations. Every person in the waiting room

1 was a Scientologist. And some of them were my good  
2 friends that I had done courses with in 1968. They  
3 were Class 8s; they were OT 6s and -- a high level of  
4 training and processing. And they all had cancer. And  
5 I was shocked. I said, "What are they doing to" --  
6 you know, "How could this be?"

7 I was very optimistic then about the healer, and  
8 I went into, I guess, hallucinating at the time. I just  
9 had blind faith that this was going to save his life.  
10 And then, a friend of mine was there and she said that  
11 she wrote a letter to Ron Hubbard asking him what he  
12 felt about this fellow, his name was Feliciano. What  
13 did he think about psychic healing? She showed me the  
14 telex from Ron Hubbard and what it said was that "I  
15 believe this is valid therapy." He said, "I am not  
16 recommending it, but I believe it is the only therapy  
17 on the planet. I feel it is the truest form of surgery  
18 on the planet. But I'm not recommending it."

19 So, I felt -- I felt relieved that even Ron Hubbard  
20 said that this might work, not that I went -- I came  
21 there because of Ron Hubbard, but it's more -- it gave me  
22 a little bit more confidence. I stayed there for two  
23 or three months and things got worse. And I had to bring  
24 my boyfriend back to New York, and he died in Sloan

1 Kettering about three months after he first got there.

2 It was very quick.

3 Now, when I arrived at LA to join the Sea Organiza-  
4 tion, they -- I happened to mention - I don't know why -  
5 that I left staff. I was like filling in my life: "I  
6 went to Mexico with my boyfriend." I was explaining that  
7 I wasn't on staff during that period.

8 I was waiting to leave Clearwater and a fellow came  
9 down to see me and said, "The GO wants to talk to you  
10 about something. They said they want a full report on  
11 this psychic healer. They want to know what happened,  
12 who was there, what happened in Mexico." I wrote a  
13 detailed report about every person who was there, what  
14 happened. I happened to include the telex.

15 Someone came down and told me that I had to sign a  
16 waiver, I think it was for \$50,000.00, that I'd never  
17 discuss this with anyone. And they said that I didn't  
18 really see a telex from Ron Hubbard.

19 MRS. GARVEY: You did --

20 MS. TAVERNA: I didn't see it.

21 And I signed a waiver that I didn't see a telex  
22 from Ron Hubbard. And I looked at it and I said, "Well,  
23 there's probably some PR reasons that they don't want it  
24 out that Ron Hubbard associated his name with a psychic

1 healer or that people did die." And I never in Scien-  
2 tology compromised my reality. I never went along with  
3 something that I didn't think was totally, totally  
4 ethical. But this time I did. I said, "It's not that  
5 important. I don't care about the healer anymore. And  
6 there's no one I want to tell about it."

7 So, I signed the paper thinking, "Well, they're  
8 looking to protect Ron's name, so I'm not going to talk  
9 about it." But when I got to Clearwater, this Skip  
10 Henson brought it out and he humiliated me. And I was  
11 still very sensitive about the subject and --

12 MR. LeCHER: Well, that's fine.

13 Mrs. --

14 MS. TAVERNA: I just wanted to say one thing that  
15 he said to me.

16 He started screaming at me when he saw the report.  
17 And he said, "Do you know that that squirrel" -- a  
18 squirrel in Scientology is someone who doesn't apply  
19 Scientology standardly or goes into another practice.  
20 He screamed very loud - he didn't say it to me - he  
21 said, "Don't you know that squirrel, squirrel" -- he  
22 screamed it at me. "How could Scientologists go to  
23 that dadadada. Don't you ever talk about this," you  
24 know. And I was very upset at the time and choked up.



1           He was talking without any knowledge of what I had  
2       been through. And, also, when he was sick, I tried in  
3       desperation -- I called every Scientology organization  
4       in the world and I asked for help. And they said, "We  
5       can't help you."

6           MR. LeCHER: Anything else, Mrs. Garvey?

7           MRS. GARVEY: No.

8           MR. LeCHER: Mr. Hatchett.

9           MR. FLYNN: A point of information, Mayor, if I  
10      may?

11          MR. LeCHER: Certainly.

12          MR. FLYNN: The question of a legal release was  
13      brought up by Mrs. Garvey. We will be putting into  
14      evidence the standard legal release which is contained  
15      in their standard volume, which, I believe the evidence  
16      will show, most Scientologists sign. But I believe the  
17      evidence will show that most Scientologists don't even --  
18      are not aware of what they are signing.

19          We will be putting that into evidence, together  
20      with actual -- the form, together with actual forms that  
21      have been signed by former Scientologists, together  
22      with promissory notes, waivers, and affidavits as to the  
23      type of --

24          MR. LeCHER: Will you be doing that after this

1 witness's testimony? Will you be doing it today?

2 MR. FLYNN: I'm not sure it will be today in terms  
3 of point of order of our witnesses and our evidence, but  
4 it will be in before tomorrow afternoon. And there's  
5 substantial -- a great deal of evidence pertaining to  
6 this subject.

7 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Hatchett.

8 MR. HATCHETT: Fine, thank you.

9 I'd like to ask you a few questions, please.

10 When you came to Clearwater in 1979 and you found  
11 things in disarray, why did you not turn around and go  
12 back, you couldn't?

13 MS. TAVERNA: Well, I felt I came here to do this  
14 course and it was going to be the greatest thing that  
15 ever happened. And I was used to -- after fifteen years  
16 of overcoming the obstacles of the insane people, I  
17 said, "Well, I know they're just stepped on and crazy.  
18 They just don't understand the real technology." So,  
19 I wasn't shocked.

20 I just thought that it wouldn't be at Flag. I've  
21 seen it in every organization. But Flag is the ultimate;  
22 it is the highest -- when you go to Flag, it's the  
23 biggest honor in the world. So, I didn't expect to see  
24 it here, but I wasn't shocked.

1 MR. HATCHETT: All right.

2 You said, when you left Clearwater trying to  
3 escape, before that you felt like a prisoner --

4 MS. TAVERNA: Yes.

5 MR. HATCHETT: -- you were going insane, and you  
6 feared for your life.

7 Was that a form of kidnapping?

8 MS. TAVERNA: Well --

9 MR. HATCHETT: It was against your will. If you  
10 wanted to go --

11 MS. TAVERNA: Yeah. I wasn't kidnapped.

12 There's a lot of -- it's a mental --

13 MRS. GARVEY: Mental kidnapping.

14 MS. TAVERNA: Yeah. It's -- you know you can't  
15 leave.

16 Plus, I've heard stories of physical abuse and  
17 locking up. And I know people who were in chain lockers  
18 chained up. I spoke with them, not at Clearwater. I  
19 don't know -- it was probably in Los Angeles on the ship.  
20 But I knew that there were forms of punishment, and  
21 there's also an obligation not to leave even if you  
22 wanted to.

23 When you're a Scientologist, you are mentally  
24 hooked. After Clearwater, I was out, but I wasn't out.

1 My mind -- I was still a Scientologist up until two  
2 months ago. And I thought I was out. Even after I  
3 thought I was out again, it didn't happen actually until  
4 a few weeks ago where I now feel that I am back to a  
5 free-thinking individual.

6 I also feel that I'm now part of the human race  
7 again. And I'm -- I've been very happy for the last  
8 few weeks. I feel like I have a new life now.

9 MR. HATCHETT: Thank you.

10 Before coming to Clearwater, you were instructed  
11 not to talk to Clearwater residents, not only Clearwater  
12 officials.

13 MS. TAVERNA: This is after I arrived I was told  
14 that.

15 MR. HATCHETT: Why did they tell you Clearwater  
16 residents? I may understand why not Clearwater officials.

17 MS. TAVERNA: Anyone in Clearwater not a Scientolo-  
18 gist.

19 MR. HATCHETT: No one?

20 MS. TAVERNA: They didn't say residents. They  
21 didn't say, "Don't talk to them." They said to be  
22 polite, to say hello, but don't discuss anything of your  
23 business here or why you were here. Give the pat answer,  
24 which was "I'm here for religious counseling," or some-

1           thing like that.

2           MR. HATCHETT: Didn't you feel you lost your  
3           business as a result of Scientology, the events in New  
4           York?

5           MS. TAVERNA: Well, it's directly related. I kind  
6           of -- through Scientology, I tend to take a lot of  
7           responsibility for my decisions. I don't like to blame  
8           people --

9           MR. LeCHER: What was your business in New York?

10          MS. TAVERNA: I did -- I had a store at one time,  
11          a souvenir store in Times Square in Manhattan. I have  
12          computer pictures that go on a tee shirt. I did promo-  
13          tional work for radio stations. And I've had -- every  
14          time I came out, I started a new business.

15          The computer machine I still have; I still get  
16          jobs. I do parties and promotional work.

17          MR. HATCHETT: I'm going to stop at this moment.

18          MR. LeCHER: Do you have any questions, Mr.  
19          Shoemaker?

20          MR. SHOEMAKER: Yes, Mayor, if I might.

21          Miss Taverna, you went into the education of the  
22          children. Do you know, are there any specific types of  
23          qualifications that the teachers are to have --

24          MS. TAVERNA: No.

1 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- to teach the courses?

2 MS. TAVERNA: The people who teach the children  
3 are not teachers; they're staff members. They don't have  
4 any teaching degree.

5 MR. SHOEMAKER: They do not have a teaching --

6 MS. TAVERNA: No.

7 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- degree?

8 MS. TAVERNA: I don't know any.

9 I think there might have been -- I think there was  
10 one in the Ability School where my daughter went in New  
11 York. But I know for a fact that the teachers at -- in  
12 Los Angeles were not teachers when my daughter was there.

13 MR. SHOEMAKER: Is that considered to be, in  
14 Scientology, a good job or a bad job or --

15 MS. TAVERNA: To be a teacher?

16 MR. SHOEMAKER: Yes.

17 MS. TAVERNA: I really don't know. I do know from  
18 other staff members that to be a nanny, which is a  
19 person who takes care of the children -- I've heard this  
20 from other staff members who have to do with personnel  
21 that very often when they have a person that they con-  
22 sider slightly degraded or who can't handle a post,  
23 they put them on nanny.

24 I got this from my sister-in-law who was the nanny

1 for many years in the Sea Organization. She blew a few  
2 times and came back because she wanted to help children.  
3 She was confronted with a situation where she had to  
4 watch thirty and forty infants at a time. And the Board  
5 of Health would be coming in for inspection, and she had  
6 to hide ten and twenty children in a closet.

7 She told me they had things called Quiet Drills  
8 regularly. Children were trained at certain periods of  
9 time they must be quiet; they didn't know why. They  
10 were put in a room, the door was locked and, until the  
11 officials left, they couldn't make any sounds. I  
12 justified this as "We're doing the best we can. We  
13 don't have room for the children. We can't close Scien-  
14 tology." All this has been justified. But I will never  
15 justify another thing again.

16 MR. SHOEMAKER: When you initially arrived at the  
17 Fort Harrison or during your --

18 MS. TAVERNA: I'm sorry, I just --

19 MR. SHOEMAKER: Sure.

20 At the time you were -- or during the time when  
21 you were in Scientology, did you ever go through a  
22 security check or --

23 MS. TAVERNA: Yes. I've had a security check  
24 many times.

1           When you arrive somewhere -- I was on the -- one  
2           of Ron Hubbard's ships in 1968, which is the Royal  
3           Scotman. I was there when he was on the ship; I met him.  
4           And before you enter anyplace where Ron Hubbard is, you  
5           must be security checked.

6           If you are going to get a leave of absence or leave  
7           the premises at any time, you have to get a security  
8           check.

9           At Clearwater, as an auditor, I was called to do  
10          many security checks on people if they were taking a  
11          leave or a vacation for a week.

12          MR. SHOEMAKER: During the time you were auditing --  
13          and in my understanding of the auditing process, you're  
14          actually auditing as to -- whether the beliefs are being  
15          accepted or not of the person that you're auditing and  
16          for the courses at that time; would that be correct?

17          MS. TAVERNA: I'm sorry; I didn't understand the  
18          question.

19          MR. SHOEMAKER: If you were -- your audit speci-  
20          fically relates directly to how well the person is doing  
21          in the given course that they might be in at that par-  
22          ticular time, such as this NED for OT auditing that you  
23          were doing to the people that were actually doing the  
24          course. And you have indicated that you had some concern



1 about what you were learning in that course.

2 Did that ever bother you at the time you were  
3 doing the auditing to try to determine what the other  
4 person --

5 MS. TAVERNA: That I was auditing the other people,  
6 was I concerned? I became --

7 MR. SHOEMAKER: That they --

8 MS. TAVERNA: I became very concerned with people  
9 that I was auditing because I saw very strange things  
10 from the people that I was auditing. Specifically, one  
11 person, who I went to the Director of Processing -- I  
12 said, "I refuse to audit this person." He had a strange  
13 glare in his eyes. He was running this NOTS process.  
14 And I won't go into the technical things of the E-Meter,  
15 but the E-Meter is supposed to register a certain way  
16 when you feel better; the needle will go down.

17 This fellow was realizing things and the needle  
18 was going up. He was -- I could see by his face that  
19 he was not there; he was in a daze. And he was like --  
20 he sort of had an insane look, and he was saying how  
21 wonderful talking slowly -- nothing was happening on the  
22 E-Meter. And I said, "There's something wrong with this  
23 person," and I said, "I'm not auditing him."

24 So, they took me off the case and I understand he

1 was really giving it to other auditors.

2 Specifically, another person, I also -- I felt like  
3 I was betraying the people that I was auditing and I  
4 didn't want to do it anymore.

5 MR. SHOEMAKER: With the -- I notice there are at  
6 least two observations, at least, the people that come  
7 here to Clearwater, many of them are young. You don't  
8 see a great number of elderly people.

9 Would that be a fair surmise? Do you have any  
10 reason as to why that is the case?

11 MS. TAVERNA: I think it's always been that way  
12 from -- even when I came in. I think young people are  
13 very susceptible to this because it sounds like such a  
14 beautiful purpose. Most young people have ideals and  
15 they want to change the world.

16 And when you come into Scientology -- I've seen  
17 people who open the door and they are just like flying  
18 for weeks and weeks. They feel they've found something.  
19 And they -- young people will recognize the outnesses  
20 in this world and they don't know how to change them.  
21 And you walk in the door and you find a group of people  
22 who have a good purpose and want to change the world --  
23 I think they're much more susceptible. And they don't  
24 have that much experience in life to know exactly what

1           they're getting into.

2           MR. SHOEMAKER: Yes.

3           Since you've left Scientology -- first of all, did  
4           they know - I'm sure they do now - but did they know  
5           before now --

6           MS. TAVERNA: I would say that most of the Scien-  
7           tologists in the world have no idea that I left up until  
8           now -- they all know.

9           But when I finally called Brown McKee and started  
10          getting answers, I just -- I realized that I didn't have  
11          to see any documents. I don't care about Ron Hubbard's  
12          past. I realized that I had been absolutely miserable  
13          for the past ten years. I hated it. I fought all the  
14          staff members. I don't care if it's true or it's not  
15          true; I don't want to be part of it.

16          So -- I actually forgot the question, but I wanted  
17          to say something about it.

18          MR. SHOEMAKER: You answered it very well.

19          The other part --

20          MS. TAVERNA: Oh.

21          MR. SHOEMAKER: -- of it is just basically: Have  
22          you had any kind of -- has anyone tried to put any  
23          pressure on you or --

24          MS. TAVERNA: Oh, yes, I remember.

1           So, what I did was I -- oh, basically -- my sister  
2 will tell her story. She was married to someone in the  
3 Sea Org. at the time. He was living with us at my sis-  
4 ter's house.

5           So, here I was, you know, talking to suppressives  
6 and "This fellow's going to get killed. He's going to go  
7 in the RPF." We're talking to lawyers. We're talking  
8 to the biggest SPs in the world. I don't think any of  
9 you really understand how traumatic -- it's unthinkable.

10          So, we were shaking. I was in such fear I couldn't  
11 sleep for days. So, we told my sister's husband because  
12 we knew that we were going to be out now. So, he went  
13 back and he told them and we since called them and told  
14 them we no longer -- I didn't want my name associated  
15 with it.

16          We had no harrassment at all. I was very surprised.  
17 I did get phone calls from old friends from '66. Students  
18 who I haven't heard from since 1965 called me up: "Do  
19 you remember me? I want to tell you that you changed  
20 my life and I love you." And it's sincere because I did.  
21 And he said, "Please, if I can help you, I'm here."

22          And I said, "I want you to know that I'm in fine  
23 shape and there's nothing wrong, nothing to handle." But  
24 they attempted to have old friends call me up to get to

1 me because they knew my button, which is something that  
2 you react to, is help. And if I know I can help someone,  
3 I'll kind of go back. But I was already over it and  
4 nothing could change me.

5 But the -- I was in terrible fear, but I have had  
6 no harrassment.

7 MR. SHOEMAKER: During the process that you were  
8 in or while you were in Scientology, did anyone attempt  
9 to use the information you provided through the auditing  
10 process, when you were audited, against you to --

11 MS. TAVERNA: No.

12 MR. LeCHER: Are you --

13 MR. SHOEMAKER: Mayor, give me just a second and  
14 I'll be finished.

15 Were you aware of what's been referred to as the  
16 Fair Game Policy?

17 MS. TAVERNA: Oh, yes. That was in effect when I  
18 was on staff.

19 MR. SHOEMAKER: And that was up until -- you said  
20 you just left -- when did you leave Clearwater?

21 MS. TAVERNA: Well, I left Clearwater in December  
22 of 1979, and I officially left, mentally, Scientology --  
23 no -- two weeks ago. Two months I'm out of the organiza-  
24 tion.

1 MR. SHOEMAKER: So, up until two months ago, you  
2 were still an active Scientologist --

3 MS. TAVERNA: Yes.

4 MR. SHOEMAKER: -- and as far as you know, the  
5 Fair Game Policy was still in effect?

6 MS. TAVERNA: Oh, I don't know. I don't know if  
7 it was in effect as of two months ago; I really don't  
8 know.

9 I meant, I have seen it in effect. I don't know  
10 currently if it is. I assume it is. It's in effect  
11 through actions because I know things are done to people  
12 And I know Scientologists will do anything they have to  
13 to protect Scientology. And I remember feeling that  
14 way, and I have compassion for them because I was so  
15 misled that I felt it was justifiable -- it was justi-  
16 fied to stop a Suppressive Person who wants to harm good  
17 people. And I believe it will always be in effect; that  
18 policy will never be out of effect in actions.

19 It was probably cancelled officially.

20 MR. SHOEMAKER: One more question and, then, I'll  
21 stop.

22 MS. TAVERNA: Okay.

23 MR. SHOEMAKER: And really, I do appreciate lis-  
24 tening to you. I think it's really been an educational

1 process for all of us.

2 In the auditing process, is there -- and this kind  
3 of relates -- let me ask two questions.

4 Were there any types of clinics provided for people  
5 that were ill or had cuts or scratches or headaches or  
6 anything like that, or anyone that had a toothache or  
7 any problem or something like that at any of the -- any  
8 organizations where you came and stayed for the counsel-  
9 ing and so forth?

10 MS. TAVERNA: No. There was a Medical Officer; he  
11 had a first aid kit. And if you needed a dentist, you  
12 would -- you know, you could go to a dentist.

13 MR. SHOEMAKER: Would he prescribe drugs?

14 MS. TAVERNA: I don't know. He never did with me.  
15 He prescribed -- I saw him prescribe vitamins. He pre-  
16 scribed vitamins for me when I was sick. I don't remem-  
17 ber what they were. He told me to take this and that.  
18 Basically, nutritional things: what to eat, take Calmag  
19 every day for your nerves.

20 MR. SHOEMAKER: I understand that in the auditing  
21 process that there was a procedure or there was a policy  
22 not to provide auditing for somebody that was diagnosed  
23 as terminally ill?

24 MS. TAVERNA: Yes.

1 MR. SHOEMAKER: Were you -- did they ever explain  
2 the reason or why that policy was --

3 MS. TAVERNA: In the early days when I was in  
4 Scientology, I just assumed that Dianetics would handle  
5 anything. I --

6 MR. SHOEMAKER: Yeah.

7 MS. TAVERNA: -- mean, there was all talk about  
8 cancer. But then, I saw so many of my friends die of  
9 cancer who had the highest level of auditing. And --  
10 well, my boyfriend died, and he couldn't get any auditing.  
11 So, I know it's not allowed.

12 MR. SHOEMAKER: Yeah.

13 MS. TAVERNA: I assumed that it was because the  
14 person was dying and, if you audited them, Scientology  
15 could be connected to the failure. And the person  
16 dying, it would be a bad promotional activity to audit  
17 someone who was going to die because I don't think it  
18 had any chance of saving them.

19 MR. SHOEMAKER: Thank you.

20 MR. LeCHER: As the Mayor of the city, I'd like to  
21 think about the image that you have of the city. And I --  
22 when you mention Rome, you get a certain mental image;  
23 when you mention Salt Lake City, you get another image.  
24 And I guess you get a totally different one when you



1 mention Dachau.

2 What did you think of when you were going to come  
3 to Clearwater, when you first arrived? And what did  
4 you think of Clearwater after you escaped? You men-  
5 tioned the word "hell" before. Does that have any  
6 connotation with our city?

7 MS. TAVERNA: What I thought of Clearwater was  
8 just so horrible; I couldn't believe that anyone lived  
9 here. I -- I hated everything about the city. I heard  
10 the name and the association was with misery and pain,  
11 and I said it was ugly and horrible. And it just meant  
12 pain and misery to me. I said I would never come back  
13 here for the rest of my life or look at.

14 I got almost physically ill when I looked at  
15 pictures of it. I would get tremors for about a month  
16 after if I got a brochure and looked at the Fort  
17 Harrison.

18 And I noticed something interesting last night.  
19 I was on the balcony of where I am staying, and I looked  
20 at the beach and I said, "It's one of the most beautiful  
21 cities I've ever been in." And I'm looking through new  
22 eyes. And I said, "What did I think was so horrible?"  
23 It was being in an atmosphere that was so ugly and so  
24 suppressive.

1 I don't think of it -- I mean, I might still have  
2 a little funny feeling about Clearwater, but I know it's  
3 not that way now.

4 MR. LeCHER: Thank you. If you stay a couple of  
5 more days here, you'll love it, too.

6 MS. TAVERNA: Okay.

7 MR. LeCHER: Thank you very much.

8 You've been very good, very cooperative, and a very  
9 brave lady.

10 MS. TAVERNA: Thank you.

11 MR. FLYNN: Mayor, can we take a ten-minute recess

12 MR. LeCHER: Yes.

13 (Whereupon, a recess was taken.)

14 (Whereupon, the hearing resumed.)

15 MR. LeCHER: Ladies and gentlemen, please take  
16 your seats, members of the Commission, staff, consultants,  
17 citizens.

18 We are going to listen to this young man and we  
19 are going to try to run through it as rapidly as possible,  
20 but also to be as thorough as possible because we do  
21 have a City Commission meeting starting in about an hour.

22 And we are going to get started with this young man.

23 And his name is Casey Kelley.

24 Mr. Kelley, will you please be sworn in.

1 CASEY KELLEY, a witness herein,  
2 having first been duly sworn by a Clerk for the City of  
3 Clearwater, was examined and testified as follows:

4 MR. FLYNN: Mayor, before he begins, I would just  
5 like to offer two items into evidence as the next  
6 exhibits.

7 One is a book, All About Radiation, which was dis-  
8 cussed this morning, a copy of which this Commission  
9 looked at by a nuclear physicist and a medical doctor,  
10 which has been purchased within the last twenty-four  
11 hours from the Fort Harrison and Scientology buildings  
12 here in Clearwater.

13 The next is the book, Dianetics: The Modern  
14 Science of Mental Health, which will be offered into  
15 evidence at this point, and the purpose for which I  
16 will state at another time.

17 (The book, All About Radiation, was  
18 marked as Exhibit No. 28, as of  
this date;

19 The book, Dianetics: The Modern  
20 Science of Mental Health, was marked  
as Exhibit No. 29, as of this date.)

21 MR. LeCHER: Okay. Thank you.

22 Mr. Kelley, I'd like to ask you the five standard  
23 questions that I'm asking of every witness before they  
24 testify.

1                   Number one is: Are you appearing here today and  
2                   testifying under oath voluntarily?

3                   MR. KELLEY: Yes.

4                   MR. LeCHER: Number two: Have you been paid by  
5                   anyone for your testimony, other than expenses for coming  
6                   to Clearwater?

7                   MR. KELLEY: No.

8                   MR. LeCHER: Number three: Do you have a lawsuit  
9                   against the Church of Scientology?

10                  MR. KELLEY: Not at this time.

11                  MR. LeCHER: Number four: Does the Church of  
12                  Scientology have a lawsuit against you?

13                  MR. KELLEY: I hope not. No, they don't.

14                  MR. LeCHER: I hope not, too.

15                  Number five: Has anyone suggested to you that you  
16                  should state anything but the truth or has anyone  
17                  suggested that you should change your testimony for any  
18                  reason?

19                  MR. KELLEY: No.

20                  MR. LeCHER: Thank you.

21                  Mr. Kelley, you have an outline I'd like you to follow  
22                  and, then, get into it in your own words.

23                  MR. KELLEY: All right.

24                  The first thing, I'm terrified. I've never spoken

1 in public in my life.

2 MR. LeCHER: Well, calm down.

3 MR. KELLEY: Let me just --

4 MR. LeCHER: We can ask you questions, if you'd  
5 prefer.

6 MR. FLYNN: He'll --

7 MR. KELLEY: Let me -- let me --

8 MR. FLYNN: -- try and get started --

9 MR. KELLEY: -- begin on some of the background  
10 information here.

11 I joined the Sea Org. in March of 1977 when I was  
12 going to Florida State University. I was eighteen at the  
13 time.

14 I got to Flag Land Base --

15 MR. LeCHER: Could you speak a little louder?

16 I don't think they can hear you. Pull the mike a little  
17 closer.

18 MR. KELLEY: Okay.

19 I got to the Flag Land Base the day after Christmas  
20 1977, and left here in October of 1980. I'm currently  
21 enlisted in the United States Navy.

22 I had several jobs when I was here at Clearwater.  
23 My main one was the job title called Technical Arrivals  
24 Data in Charge. It's kind of a lofty title, which meant

1 I had -- I have no knowledge of criminal activities in  
2 the Clearwater area or any other area, actually.

3 These are some of the things that I was doing on  
4 the job. When I was the Technical Arrivals Data --

5 MR. LeCHER: Excuse me.

6 Did you say you have no knowledge or new knowledge?

7 MR. KELLEY: No knowledge.

8 MR. LeCHER: No knowledge.

9 MR. KELLEY: No knowledge, none.

10 MR. SHOEMAKER: Would you give that title again,  
11 please, Mr. Kelley?

12 MR. KELLEY: Technical Arrivals Data in Charge.

13 MR. SHOEMAKER: Thank you.

14 MR. KELLEY: One of the things they tend to do is  
15 pay you in title.

16 My job was -- I kept the accounts -- I kept an  
17 account record for every person that was on public lines  
18 at Flag, which is somewhere around five thousand names.  
19 I would go to treasury and go through every invoice that  
20 was written, and I had an accurate list of people who had  
21 made an advanced payment to the Flag Land Base.

22 And the reason I did that was we would find out  
23 who had paid fully for a service and, then, we -- our  
24 office would call them to get them to show up at Clear-

1 water to do that service. It's -- especially with  
2 Scientologists, there's a lot of people that can afford  
3 to pay for these services but don't have the time to  
4 show up. So, what we would do is our office would call  
5 them and try to get them to show up earlier than they  
6 had anticipated or just get them to show up. I per-  
7 sonally took a lot of flak from these guys.

8 And then after they showed up, then we could  
9 deliver the service and then sell them more. You can't  
10 sell them any more if they haven't done what they already  
11 paid for.

12 We also used this list to sell books because they  
13 used to pay a percentage of the book sale to the staff  
14 member that sold the book. So, there were some people  
15 selling books. I could go into that later.

16 I was familiar with the ways that they got their  
17 money into the Clearwater Organization, but I wasn't  
18 directly involved with it. I wasn't -- I was in dis-  
19 agreement with the way they made some of their money:  
20 the high-pressure sales techniques that they used. I  
21 never -- I never - and I still don't - I never could  
22 tolerate that, the way they -- boy, "You've done your  
23 service and" -- drop the net. And people having to sell  
24 things and mortgage things seemingly against their will,

1 or with great reservations -- reservations, not really  
2 wanting to but knowing that because Scientology is such  
3 a good thing, that's what they really should do next.

4 Anyway, back -- one of the ways that they make --  
5 that the Clearwater Church makes money is they have three  
6 tours out, and almost all the time. They call it  
7 regging, making money. There's three tours out most all  
8 the time. There's one on the East coast, one on the West  
9 coast, and one in Europe. And they'll go from one city,  
10 either for a week, week and-a-half, two weeks, and then  
11 go the next one. And they make a lot of money that way.  
12 Especially in Europe, they make a lot of money in Europe.

13 Since I'm talking about money, we'll go down to  
14 that. The highest single week gross income that we made  
15 when I was here was 2.3 million dollars. And that's tax  
16 free.

17 MR. HATCHETT: Tax free.

18 MR. KELLEY: Well --

19 MR. LeCHER: Well, we know all about --

20 MR. KELLEY: You know all about tax free, right?

21 I think that's one of the reasons why I'm possibly here.

22 That was a good week.

23 I would guess that the average weekly gross income  
24 while I was there, or at least while I was on this TAD



1 post, was anywhere between four and five hundred thousand  
2 dollars. I don't know where all that money went. The  
3 people that do don't tell. It goes to what's called  
4 Sea Org. Reserves, which is kind of a --

5 MR. LeCHER: Who knows that?

6 MR. KELLEY: The people that are on the Sea Org.  
7 Reserves Committee. And that's a very few elite people.  
8 Those guys are people that have been in Scientology for a  
9 long time, usually. And they're pretty cloak and dagger.  
10 They don't -- they play their cards pretty close to their  
11 chest.

12 In 1980, when Scientology worldwide bought a whole  
13 bunch of buildings around the world -- they bought some-  
14 where in the neighborhood of twenty-five million dollars  
15 worth of buildings around the world, and they paid cash  
16 for all of them. Those were all -- they didn't rent  
17 anything, because there was no point in renting anything;  
18 that was just money down the tubes. They believe in  
19 buying them.

20 The person that was in charge of the Sea Org.  
21 Reserves, the SOR Chief, came to Flag Service Organiza-  
22 tion - you know, it was across the street - to one of our  
23 staff meetings one Friday night, and he talked to us  
24 about it. Because the Flag Ship Organization, which is --

1 or the Flag Service Organization is the organization here  
2 in Clearwater that delivers the services. They're the  
3 ones that do the auditing for the public people, and they  
4 sell the services. They make a majority of the money.  
5 Worldwide, they make a majority of the money.

6 He came to our -- one of our staff meetings, and  
7 this is a quote - Mr. Hinklenberg said - "All these  
8 buildings we bought make a dent in the reserves." The  
9 key word there is "dent." He said it made a dent in  
10 the reserves. He didn't tell us -- I mean, a dent could  
11 be two percent to seventy-five percent. He didn't say  
12 the exact percentage of the dent. Twenty-five million  
13 dollars, I would think -- I don't know. I don't know  
14 how much was in the reserves; he wouldn't tell us.

15 One of the other things that I found very interest-  
16 ing is they have -- they don't keep more -- any more than  
17 \$40,000.00 in any one bank in the Pinellas County area.  
18 Or in the bay area, they use banks in Tampa. So, con-  
19 sequently, I know that they have -- I would guess at  
20 least thirty bank accounts around the area, because I've  
21 seen the treasury office and they have a stack of check-  
22 books, you know. They're a stack of checkbooks this  
23 high.

24 For example, the Clearwater bank account would be

1           used for, say, tours. And the Barnet Bank down the street  
2           would be used for phones, for example. They have it  
3           broken up so it's easier to keep track where that money's  
4           going.

5           When I was in the FSO, we used to get a stat sheet  
6           out. We used to give a stat sheet to the Flag Bureau,  
7           which is the management organization in the West coast  
8           building. And they manage all Scientology organizations  
9           worldwide. And they publish the statistics. And usually,  
10          the organization in Clearwater's income is equal to that  
11          of the rest of the world put together. All Scientology  
12          organizations put together usually fall short of this  
13          place. And that is a lot of money. There are a lot of other  
14          Scientology organizations, also; I don't know how many  
15          there are. There's a bunch of them, including the big  
16          ones in Los Angeles. You know, our gross income here  
17          quite often was more.

18          I'll talk down here if you -- some of my knowledge  
19          about the Guardian's Office. In early '78 - I chuckle  
20          about this now - I was in charge of religious image.  
21          And they had a religious image checklist that I was  
22          supposed to follow and to help get in, help to upgrade  
23          the religious image of our buildings and our personnel  
24          around Clearwater. I was working for the Assistant

1 Guardian for Public Relations, who, at that time, was  
2 Miss Nancy Risi, who I know you're familiar with.

3 MR. LeCHER: Yes, I remember her.

4 MR. KELLEY: A couple of things that I was in  
5 charge -- that I was supposed to do was get certificates,  
6 minister certificates, you know - Larry Lattimore made  
7 them, that sort of thing - up where people could see  
8 them if they wandered into Clearwater or any one of the  
9 buildings. You know, they'd see someone who was a  
10 minister sitting there. Or crosses -- I was also  
11 supposed to build those eight-point crosses, which is  
12 next to impossible.

13 I was also supposed to talk to our staff members  
14 and public about upgrading their image around town. You  
15 know, it was kind of hard to tell some of these people  
16 anything, you know, "Your jeans have frazzles on them."  
17 I felt kind of -- it was kind of a wishy-washy job, and  
18 I wasn't real enthused about it because I didn't have  
19 the power. I was working as a minor staff member trying  
20 to do a major job. And I got it as a full-time job,  
21 and I did it maybe a couple of hours a week. I'd go  
22 around and do my checklist and find out where everything  
23 was not the way it was supposed to be, basically. And  
24 Miss Risi used to jump on me about it. What could I

1 do? It wasn't my job.

2 Anyway, one of the things: We used to have G --  
3 Guardian's Office briefings about -- fairly frequently,  
4 especially, when things were getting hot with Mr. Tenney  
5 and his band every now and then, when he was raising such  
6 a fuss here. We used to get these briefings from the  
7 Guardian's Office, and they were usually pretty interest-  
8 ing. They would always make it sound like we were  
9 winning.

10 And one of the things that I remember was when  
11 they had the Jonestown tragedy in Guyana -- I wasn't  
12 really aware of what was going on out there. I didn't  
13 know they were a religious cult, because when you say  
14 "cult" to a Scientologist, he automatically turns you  
15 off, thinking that you don't know what you're talking  
16 about, thinking that you're anti-Scientology as soon as  
17 you say the word "cult," religious cult, dangerous cult,  
18 whatever.

19 So, one of the things that they told us was that  
20 "You've got to keep in touch with your families during  
21 this Guyana thing, because they're going to get all  
22 concerned about you being in a religious cult." They  
23 told us to keep writing those good roads, fair weather  
24 letters. Whenever you had trouble at home, you were

1           supposed to write: "Dear Mom," you know, "things are  
2           fine, weather is beautiful," you know, "getting a tan,"  
3           you know, "went to Disney World last week." You know,  
4           you're not supposed to mention that the City of Clear-  
5           water is about ready to burn the building. You weren't  
6           supposed to tell them about the bad things, the bad news.  
7           You were supposed to just give them good roads, fair  
8           weather, just wishy-washy, ho-hum letters, which most  
9           people could see right through.

10                 Since I've gotten out, my family has said -- has  
11           told me that when they'd get these letters, they knew  
12           that it wasn't me. It seemed a little fakey to them.

13                 Anyway, there's a little thing on my outline about  
14           my -- about marriage and legal discretions. I don't know  
15           if you want me to go into that or not.

16                 MR. FLYNN: It's pertinent, go ahead.

17                 MR. LeCHER: If the Attorney, Mr. Flynn, thinks  
18           it's pertinent, then, go ahead.

19                 MR. FLYNN: For a very specific reason.

20                 MR. KELLEY: Okay. I don't know about this.

21                 I was married on March 6th, '79. My wife and I  
22           obtained a marriage license and had blood tests here in  
23           Clearwater. We were married by a friend of mine in my  
24           office who is a minister. We were both ministers at the

1 time, too, but that isn't pertinent. We were married by  
2 a Scientology minister.

3 Four months later, we got second thoughts about  
4 the marriage, which is really not apropos here. The  
5 minister said - Reverend Al - he said, "Well, you don't  
6 have to worry about a divorce because I never sent your  
7 marriage certificate in." He said, "I wanted to save  
8 you some trouble in case it popped up." I said, "Hey,  
9 no sweat, great," you know.

10 MR. LeCHER: Does your wife know she's no longer  
11 married?

12 MR. KELLEY: Yes.

13 MR. FLYNN: That's why it's significant, Mayor.  
14 But there still may be a legal issue and there may be a  
15 situation where neither party is exactly certain of their  
16 legal rights at this point as to whether they are married  
17 or divorced, because the city may have been allowing a  
18 minister of the Church to issue a marriage license which  
19 was not recorded. And both parties may now feel that  
20 they are married or divorced, and the matter is in  
21 limbo.

22 MR. KELLEY: I hope not because she remarried.

23 MR. LeCHER: I hope she's not a bigamist.

24 Anyway, let's get back to reality. You're no longer

1 married as far as --

2 MR. KELLEY: The reason we thought that -- we felt  
3 that was significant was that I don't think I was the  
4 only person to do that.

5 MRS. GARVEY: You mean, married by a Scientologist?

6 MR. KELLEY: Oh, no, there are tons of those.

7 I mean, there's -- because people see that -- see,  
8 the no premarital sex law that they have, which is --  
9 some of us had a little trouble adjusting to that, and --  
10 though, we just still followed it. So, consequently,  
11 there's a lot of rapid marriages, short courtships. And  
12 at least -- you wouldn't believe -- you wouldn't believe  
13 it even if I told you. But -- and consequently, there's  
14 a lot of short marriages over there. But they're married  
15 by a Scientologist and the divorce is usually uncontested,  
16 at least among staff members.

17 Anyway, let's wander off here to living conditions.  
18 I lived in all three buildings that staff members lived  
19 in while here. I lived at the Fort Harrison, the Quality  
20 Inn, and the Heart of Clearwater.

21 Most of that time I spent in rooms with ten to  
22 twelve people in them, regular hotel rooms. Sometimes  
23 more, sometimes less. It usually averaged about eight  
24 to ten, because I had many different rooms. People would



1 move often.

2 When I first came on staff here, they had what's  
3 called the men's dorm. You won't believe this. We had  
4 fifty-four bunks in that room.

5 MR. LeCHER: In one room?

6 MR. KELLEY: It wasn't a hotel room; it was a  
7 little bigger than that. It was in the old locker room  
8 of the old Jack Heart Hotel. It was downstairs and,  
9 obviously, there wasn't a whole lot of room to move  
10 around down there. But it was definitely -- it was fifty-  
11 four bunks and -- I'm trying to remember if we had any  
12 vacancies. There was probably forty-eight men living  
13 in there at the time, and I lived there for six months.  
14 That wasn't a real pleasant place; it was pretty crowded.

15 That's all I have for my statement.

16 MR. LeCHER: Well, you mentioned that the money  
17 was as high as 2.3 million and averaged four to five  
18 hundred thousand dollars a week.

19 MR. KELLEY: That's correct.

20 MR. LeCHER: And the Sea Org. took the money.

21 MR. KELLEY: Yes.

22 MR. LeCHER: Do you know their names, the Sea Org.  
23 people?

24 MR. KELLEY: I know the post titles, a couple of

1           them. One of them was the SOR Chief, and -- boy. I'm  
2           trying to remember. I know who was in on it, how's  
3           that? One of them was the Director of Records, Assets,  
4           and Materiel. And his name was Homer Shomer.

5           MR. LeCHER: Homer Shomer?

6           MR. KELLEY: Homer Shomer. A nice -- a nice, little  
7           Jewish man, Homer Shomer.

8           And --

9           MR. LeCHER: Well, we don't want to get into  
10          nationalities or religion.

11          MR. KELLEY: Well, that's another story.

12          Anyway, Homer knew what was going on at the SOR.  
13          But, like I say, these guys played it pretty close to the  
14          chest. He mentioned to me one time about investing it  
15          in possibly gold or gems of some kind. But he definitely  
16          did not go into specifics. This was when gold was going  
17          for, I think, eight hundred dollars an ounce or something.  
18          There was speculation on what they should invest some  
19          of this money in. They also mentioned something about  
20          property. But this was just in passing. I used to hang  
21          out in his office while I was digging through invoices.

22          But he didn't say, "We bought fourteen pounds of  
23          gold." But he said SOR was considering it, the SOR  
24          Committee.

1           Some of the other -- one of the other posts in  
2 charge that was in on that SOR -- I can't remember the  
3 exact title. It was a person that was in charge of all  
4 treasury departments worldwide. There's a person over  
5 in the West coast -- most Scientology organizations have  
6 seven divisions. Around the world, most of them have  
7 seven.

8           There's a person at Flag that's in charge of all  
9 of those -- of each of them. Like, this person is a per-  
10 son in charge of the treasury division. And she was in  
11 on it. She was in charge of all finances worldwide. But  
12 I --

13          MR. LeCHER: Do you think all that money went back  
14 to Los Angeles that was collected in Clearwater or was  
15 it spread to do good work in the City of Clearwater?

16          MR. KELLEY: I don't know exactly where it went.

17          MR. LeCHER: Where the money went. You just know  
18 you collected it?

19          MR. KELLEY: Right. I know where some of it didn't  
20 go.

21          MR. LeCHER: Do you want to tell me where it didn't  
22 go?

23          MR. KELLEY: Yeah.

24          One of the places it didn't go was for meals for

1 the -- food. It was not like no -- we were fed, but it  
2 was often low quality. Especially for the amount of money  
3 we were making, like, you know -- they were making --  
4 say, we had a bad week and only made four hundred thousand  
5 dollars. You know, the expenses aren't going to come  
6 near that, you know.

7 MR. LeCHER: Well, didn't you also get fed beans  
8 and rice?

9 MR. KELLEY: On one occasion for a week we did,  
10 which was an interesting story.

11 MR. LeCHER: I heard -- we --

12 MR. KELLEY: I mean, Miss Taverna mentioned some-  
13 thing about that.

14 What had happened was -- we had a person that was  
15 treasury secretary for the Flag Ship Organization who  
16 was a little off his rocker. And what he was doing,  
17 basically, was making up money. He was reporting money  
18 that hadn't actually been turned in.

19 And so, the organization thought they had this  
20 amount of money to spend, when, in fact, it was down  
21 here, all right? And this guy was -- I mean, he was the  
22 big cheese. But he was the new kid on the block, you  
23 know, he was the boy wonder. He was making all this  
24 money; no one actually saw it. But here he was making

1 all this money.

2 And our gross income was over the five hundred  
3 thousand dollar mark, which, at that time, was the highest  
4 ever. I mean, it was just phenomenal. Most of it was  
5 coming from this one guy in the department. And it was  
6 just great; boy, we were all enthused about it.

7 And then, we found out that this guy wasn't all --  
8 he didn't have all his stuff in one bag, and he got --  
9 they put him in the RPF.

10 MR. LeCHER: He belonged in the RPF.

11 MR. KELLEY: Right. I mean, this guy was nuts.  
12 He was reporting money that we didn't have.

13 MR. LeCHER: Was that Homer Shomer?

14 MR. KELLEY: No. Let's not make Homer jokes.

15 What happened was we got a telex from Ron, from  
16 L. Ron -- from LRH that said, "You thought you could  
17 make five hundred thousand dollars, so do it." And that  
18 is a quote. "You have by the end of next week to do it.  
19 You better get your honest GI up to five hundred grand  
20 or you're going on beans and rice." And our honest GI,  
21 at that time, was around three hundred, three hundred  
22 fifty, you know.

23 MR. LeCHER: What is an honest GI?

24 MR. KELLEY: That's what we were already making

1 before David what's his face was falsely reporting  
2 statistics.

3 So -- well, we didn't make it. We didn't come up --  
4 we didn't make five hundred thousand dollars by the dead-  
5 line. We went on beans and rice. I remember that was  
6 on my birthday, 1978. And I remember it because every-  
7 body else was eating beans and rice and I had cake. It  
8 was October 13th --

9 MR. LeCHER: Didn't that bother you, though, to take  
10 in four or five hundred thousand a month and have beans  
11 and rice?

12 MR. KELLEY: That's a week.

13 MR. LeCHER: A week? A week, rather.

14 Didn't that get you to think, you know, "They can  
15 at least afford to give me a hamburger or a steak or a  
16 lobster," or something like that?

17 MR. KELLEY: I wasn't real pleased with it. But  
18 it -- and I really felt it was unfair to punish the whole  
19 staff because one guy was a little off, you know. I  
20 never have believed that you should punish everybody for  
21 one person's messing up. But you -- I was pretty well  
22 indoctrinated then. That was when I was new on staff  
23 and I wasn't -- I got disenchanted later on. So, this is  
24 when I was new and I was still dedicated. I think I ate

1 at McDonald's that week.

2 MR. LeCHER: What were you paid?

3 MR. KELLEY: At that time, when I first came on  
4 staff, I was paid \$8.60 a week.

5 MR. LeCHER: Eighty?

6 MR. KELLEY: Eight bucks --

7 MR. LeCHER: Eight dollars?

8 MR. KELLEY: Eight-sixty, \$8.60. That was for the  
9 first -- oh, boy, a long time, year and-a-half, until  
10 I became a full-fledged staff member and, then, it went  
11 up to seventeen-twenty.

12 MR. LeCHER: All right.

13 Well, how did you live? I mean, you had to buy  
14 personal things. You had to buy toothpaste --

15 MR. KELLEY: My main vice is pipe tobacco. You  
16 just spread your money very thin. That's all you buy  
17 is your personal things. You don't go out, eat, nothing,  
18 you know.

19 MRS. GARVEY: You couldn't go to a restaurant  
20 often.

21 MR. LeCHER: You couldn't go to McDonald's very  
22 often.

23 MR. KELLEY: No. You couldn't go to McDonald's  
24 at all. Even when you were making the whole seventeen-

1           twenty, it was kind of rough to go. You know, see, when  
2           you're in the galley to eat lunch and you didn't like it,  
3           you know, you had whatever it was and you weren't enthused  
4           about that meal, you didn't go to McDonald's too often.  
5           You know, it was just kind of -- that's one of the main  
6           reasons I got out, because here I was working seventy to  
7           eighty hours a week and I'm making twenty bucks, you  
8           know.

9           This did not jive. It just didn't add up.

10          MRS. GARVEY: Good thinking.

11          MR. LeCHER: Okay..

12          MR. KELLEY: It took a while --

13          MR. LeCHER: Okay.

14          So, that gave you your first clue: seventy to  
15          eighty hours a week for \$20.00 and you got disillusioned  
16          then.

17          MR. KELLEY: Right.

18          MR. LeCHER: Most of the people that I see walking  
19          down the street look about your age.

20          Are they existing on family money or --

21          MR. KELLEY: Very few. There's a few people that  
22          have family money. And those are the people you see  
23          driving.

24          MR. LeCHER: Driving.



1 MR. KELLEY: I tend to make things sound funny  
2 when I'm nervous. I don't want to make this sound any  
3 less serious than it is, because it is very serious.

4 People have -- most of the people, the staff mem-  
5 bers, that do drive cars have family money. David Ziff  
6 drives a Jaguar; he has lots of family money.

7 MR. LeCHER: Well, when you're living with fifty-  
8 five men to a room, an old locker room, didn't you ques-  
9 tion that that could be a -- cause disease or spread of  
10 disease or an epidemic --

11 MR. KELLEY: We were -- we kept it --

12 MR. LeCHER: -- or social problems, like the  
13 bathroom?

14 MR. KELLEY: We kept that place spotless. We really  
15 did; we did keep it clean. We kept it very clean, as a  
16 matter of fact. So, there wasn't too much spread of that.

17 MR. LeCHER: One question I'd like to ask -- and I  
18 don't know if you can answer me; you may be the wrong  
19 witness to ask this, but no one's asked it yet.

20 Why Clearwater? And why did you come in under the  
21 United Churches of Florida? Why not what you really  
22 were?

23 MR. KELLEY: Because I doubt if you would have sold  
24 us the buildings.

1 MR. LeCHER: Well, I didn't have anything to do  
2 with selling the buildings.

3 MR. KELLEY: Well, when I was here, I asked --  
4 that was the reason that I heard was that -- it's just  
5 speculation on my part or things that I've heard from  
6 people who were here at that time. They said they  
7 couldn't have bought the building or they would have  
8 raised the price of the building at the Fort Harrison  
9 if they would have found out who it was.

10 MR. LeCHER: But you just -- they just decided  
11 Clearwater was a nice little town they could take over?

12 MR. KELLEY: It had big, cheap hotels. In other  
13 words --

14 MR. LeCHER: Big, cheap hotels?

15 MR. KELLEY: That was another part of it. That's  
16 my wording, obviously, because the Fort Harrsion was,  
17 to my knowledge -- it was rather run down when they  
18 bought it in '75. It was on a -- it was a buy, apparent-  
19 ly. It was two million dollars or something.

20 MR. LeCHER: I think two-five.

21 MR. HATCHETT: Two-five.

22 MR. LeCHER: Well, I was in there, of course, not  
23 recently, but when it was the old hotel and I remember  
24 the rooms being very small, old salesman-type hotel with

1 little tiny beds. I remember that type of room. I  
2 don't know how you could fit -- two people in that room  
3 would be a crowd.

4 How anyone can fit eight or ten in those little  
5 tiny, old-timey salesman-type hotel rooms -- it's got to  
6 be -- something's got to be wrong someplace. There's  
7 got to be a health hazard or it's got to cause all kinds  
8 of other problems.

9 MR. KELLEY: I just got off a naval ship and it's  
10 pretty similar as far as size --

11 MR. LeCHER: They're not taking in four or five  
12 hundred thousand dollars a week, either.

13 MR. KELLEY: Right.

14 MR. LeCHER: Okay.

15 I can go on, but I'm going to yield now to regging  
16 hours?

17 MR. KELLEY: Regging tours?

18 MR. LeCHER: Regging tours and how they channel  
19 business back to Clearwater.

20 What is this all about, regging tours?

21 MR. KELLEY: Regging.

22 MR. LeCHER: Regging.

23 MR. KELLEY: You -- it's a registrar. A person  
24 who -- a registrar is a person who takes in money. He

1 tells the person how much he needs the service or -- and  
2 then, gets him to give him a check for the service.

3 Like I said, they've got three regging tours that  
4 are out around the world just regging up money for the  
5 Clearwater operation.

6 MR. LeCHER: How do you get to be a regging?

7 MR. KELLEY: Reg, a registrar?

8 MR. LeCHER: It's not the best job. I mean --

9 MR. KELLEY: Those guys make good money; they make  
10 good bonuses.

11 MR. LeCHER: Are they paid commission?

12 MR. KELLEY: Yes. Not on -- they're paid commission  
13 on books.

14 MR. LeCHER: From this four to five hundred  
15 thousand to a million or 2.3, did anybody get a cut on  
16 that?

17 MR. CALDERBANK: Or a bonus?

18 MR. LeCHER: Or a bonus, like --

19 MR. KELLEY: Oh, certainly. The whole staff --  
20 everybody got a bonus. Everybody got at least \$150.00.  
21 Everybody got at least a bonus on that one.

22 MR. LeCHER: Even you?

23 MR. KELLEY: Even me. Everyone did.

24 As far -- I know one person who sold 1.1 million

1 dollars in books. One guy --

2 MR. LeCHER: One man?

3 MR. KELLEY: -- in Europe, and he got, I believe  
4 it was, five percent, which is fifty grand in commission.

5 MR. LeCHER: Was it a library?

6 MR. KELLEY: Yes. It was a whole bunch of books.  
7 He was -- this gentleman in, I think it was, Lucerne,  
8 Switzerland was starting a chain of missions there. And  
9 he bought in a lump sum. He had old, European family  
10 money. Walter Hegetschweiler. No one on earth will  
11 ever --

12 MR. LeCHER: Walter Hegetschweiler?

13 MR. KELLEY: Yes. I can spell it if you want me  
14 to.

15 MR. LeCHER: Spell it, please.

16 MR. KELLEY: I think I'm the one person at Flag  
17 that ever could. H-e-g-e-t-s-c-h-w-e-i-l-e-r.

18 MRS. GARVEY: Good for you.

19 MR. LeCHER: All right. I know we're getting down  
20 to the end, ladies and gentlemen, but let's just be nice  
21 and act like good gentlemen and gentleladies.

22 We don't want to make this a farce.

23 MR. KELLEY: No.

24 MR. LeCHER: This is serious. I know you're a good,

1 entertaining witness, but this is not a farce; it is  
2 serious. And we don't want to be criticized for  
3 ridiculing another man's or woman's organization.

4 MR. KELLEY: One thing I was told to mention was  
5 that was -- the bonus -- some people were paid bonuses  
6 in paper --

7 MR. LeCHER: Like script?

8 MR. KELLEY: No, their account would be credited.

9 MRS. GARVEY: Toward taking another course?

10 MR. KELLEY: Right.

11 And on this particular occasion, I believe that  
12 was made in cash, or a check given. He since -- the  
13 gentleman that sold the course -- I mean, those books  
14 to Mr. Hegetschweiler bought his auditing at that time.  
15 And a staff member doesn't ever have to buy auditing; he  
16 never has to. But rather than wait around to get his  
17 NED for OTs auditing, he just paid for it, which was --  
18 I thought it was kind of foolish myself, because a man  
19 that does that amount of business for the Church eventu-  
20 ally will be awarded that auditing for nothing. But he  
21 turned right around and spent forty thousand of it for  
22 his auditing.

23 MR. LeCHER: Mr. Berfield, do you have any questions  
24 you'd like to ask?

1 MR. BERFIELD: Just a couple.

2 Mr. Kelley, do you mind if I call you Casey?

3 MR. KELLEY: No.

4 MR. BERFIELD: I'm still not sure: Why or how  
5 did you ever get involved in Scientology?

6 MR. KELLEY: I was going to Florida State University  
7 in Fort Lauderdale.

8 MR. BERFIELD: Did you take any of their auditing  
9 courses or anything like that?

10 MR. KELLEY: I never paid for one, other than --  
11 after I came on staff.

12 MR. BERFIELD: Did -- in taking those, have you  
13 reviewed any of those books since you've taken a course?

14 MR. KELLEY: No, I haven't. I haven't been too  
15 enthused about hearing anything about Scientology since  
16 I got out in October of last year.

17 MR. BERFIELD: You're no longer associated with  
18 them?

19 MR. KELLEY: No.

20 MR. BERFIELD: Why did you leave Scientology?

21 MR. KELLEY: I left -- the original reason I left  
22 Clearwater was to go on vacation. And when I got on  
23 vacation, my brother had contacted some people about  
24 Scientology and had done his research on what was

1 actually going on. And he just kind of verbally -- he  
2 asked me what I was doing in a rather point-blank way.  
3 You know, "Why are you working these hours for this  
4 amount of money?" And "Where is this money going?" And  
5 I said, "Jesus, I don't know."

6 Then, I started thinking about it on my own. And  
7 that's how I got out. I just never returned from my  
8 vacation.

9 MR. BERFIELD: The job that you were in, was that  
10 more of a financial management-type job?

11 MR. KELLEY: The job is actually located in the  
12 executive division. I spent a lot of time in treasury.  
13 I saw every invoice that came in, all of them: John  
14 Travolta -- I don't want to name celebrity names, but  
15 I saw everybody's invoice.

16 MR. BERFIELD: Did everybody --

17 MR. KELLEY: I had them on my list.

18 MR. BERFIELD: Did everyone pay cash for their  
19 services or --

20 MR. KELLEY: Check; mostly check.

21 MR. BERFIELD: Was there any promissory notes or  
22 anything --

23 MR. KELLEY: No, you couldn't do that.

24 MR. BERFIELD: You couldn't do that.



1 MR. KELLEY: No.

2 MR. BERFIELD: Did you --

3 MR. KELLEY: You had to have the money on hand.

4 MR. BERFIELD: So, you had no collection problems  
5 as far as getting the money?

6 MR. KELLEY: The only time you'd have collection  
7 problems would be, say, a person bought some auditing.  
8 He did the auditing, but he was in the middle of an  
9 auditing action and he had -- he needed more, or else  
10 there could be dire consequences for the individual.  
11 Say, there was a possibility that he might get killed,  
12 whatever. Then, he would go in debt to the organization  
13 and get either review auditing or whatever it was that  
14 was needed. And that sometimes got pretty expensive.

15 That's the only time a public person would owe the  
16 organization.

17 MR. BERFIELD: Do you know how they collect their  
18 money?

19 MR. KELLEY: I certainly do. I used to work in  
20 the office where it was done.

21 They would call them or write them letters or --  
22 basically, a lot the same way that they get regular  
23 money, except this was a little -- this seemed to be a  
24 little nastier.

1 MR. BERFIELD: How so?

2 MR. KELLEY: Well, you know, "You owe us money."

3 MR. BERFIELD: Did you get that from -- I mean,  
4 there was no force or coercion to collect this money?

5 MR. KELLEY: None that I ever saw. They sometimes --  
6 I got -- none that I ever saw.

7 MR. BERFIELD: Did you ever see any kind of a work-  
8 ing budget? In other words, when you took in four hundred  
9 thousand dollars a week, it cost a hundred and fifty or  
10 two hundred thousand dollars a week to run the hotel?

11 MR. KELLEY: A working budget? Every week, the  
12 financial planning for that week would be posted.

13 MR. BERFIELD: What would that be?

14 MR. KELLEY: That would be, like, how much money  
15 was spent for phone calls -- well, each division, how  
16 much money they had allocated to them.

17 For example, our office had twenty-five hundred  
18 bucks on phone calls. That's how much we were allocated;  
19 we spent more than that.

20 MR. BERFIELD: But did you see this for the whole  
21 operation?

22 MR. KELLEY: Oh, yes. But I can't remember too  
23 much because -- I'm sorry, because it was just --

24 MR. BERFIELD: No, no, no, no.

1 MR. KELLEY: -- on a piece of paper, and if it  
2 didn't concern my office, I really wasn't paying that  
3 much attention.

4 MR. BERFIELD: So, in other words, on a poorer week  
5 when they got four hundred thousand dollars, you don't know  
6 whether their operating budget was a hundred and twenty  
7 thousand or --

8 MR. KELLEY: No.

9 I know that on a poorer week it was tougher to get  
10 something that -- it was like getting blood from a turnip  
11 to get money out of the Financial Planning Committee. I  
12 know that.

13 For example, I used my boss's typewriter, which was  
14 his own personal electric typewriter. And I tried to get  
15 the organization to rent one for him so I could give him  
16 back his. And no one at Request would give me a type-  
17 writer, you know, which seemed to me to be a bit odd,  
18 you know, because our office was doing an outstanding job.  
19 And yet, we still couldn't get the typewriter.

20 You know, it's hard to get money from the organiza-  
21 tion.

22 MR. BERFIELD: Question: When you were mentioning  
23 these living expenses -- living conditions similar to  
24 the military, did you ever have any kind of inspection

1 or --

2 MR. KELLEY: Oh, yeah.

3 MR. BERFIELD: -- from the Fire Marshall?

4 What happened in a situation like that?

5 MR. KELLEY: Well, it's like Lori said. I mean,  
6 you would know they were coming and there'd be a giant  
7 press to clean the place up a lot. You know, you made  
8 sure all the dormitories were all clean and neat and  
9 that sort of thing.

10 MR. BERFIELD: But do you know if they moved beds or  
11 anything?

12 MR. KELLEY: The only thing I can remember on that  
13 sort of deal was when a young man by the -- which doesn't  
14 really have to do with a fire inspection; it has to do  
15 with moving a person.

16 I remember when Charles Fletcher had trouble with  
17 his parents here in Clearwater because they were -- that  
18 was a big deal here in the city. I remember the mayor  
19 was in on it or somebody; it was a big deal.

20 His parents came down and tried to get him out of  
21 here. Well, he was living in the dorm at the time down  
22 there with forty-seven other people. They moved him up  
23 to a regular public room for the day. They put him and  
24 one other person in a regular room. They moved in some

1 books and made it lived in so, when his parents came to  
2 visit him, he had a regular room with just one other  
3 person when, in actual fact, he lived downstairs with  
4 the rest of us.

5 MR. BERFIELD: Just a question out of curiosity  
6 here: To this day, you do not know whether you're  
7 divorced or --

8 MR. KELLEY: I consider myself to be. I mean, the  
9 marriage certificate no longer -- it didn't get sent in.

10 MR. BERFIELD: Do you know that for a fact?

11 MR. KELLEY: Yes, because I chopped it up with a  
12 pair of scissors.

13 MR. BERFIELD: What happens on these other marriages  
14 that are performed? Do they go through the legal steps  
15 of getting divorces if there are divorces?

16 MR. KELLEY: If they get -- as far as I know, they  
17 do.

18 See, that's in -- that's bad news, and you don't  
19 talk about bad news between yourselves. You know, I  
20 had several friends who got divorced last year and that  
21 was bad news; we didn't discuss it.

22 MR. BERFIELD: Just one final question: It's still  
23 unclear in my mind what would motivate you to come down  
24 on liberty and talk to us?

1 MR. KELLEY: A chance to get back.

2 MR. BERFIELD: Back at --

3 MR. KELLEY: Back at Scientology because I feel  
4 like I got the short end of the stick for those three  
5 years, and I feel I have something to say. I had some  
6 dealings -- I worked there for three years. I felt that  
7 I had some testimony that would be of value to the  
8 Commission.

9 MR. BERFIELD: Well, do you feel it's a more vin-  
10 dictive one than an informative one?

11 MR. KELLEY: No. It's because I had -- you know,  
12 I had gotten terribly emotional about the whole thing.  
13 I don't feel like I'm going to go bomb -- you know, I'm  
14 not going to go calling bomb threats or anything like  
15 that. I don't feel vindictive in an emotional way.

16 But Scientology is something that I feel most  
17 people don't know about what really goes on up here at  
18 the Fort Harrison. And I knew.

19 MR. BERFIELD: Do you think that should be of deep  
20 concern to this Commission and the people in --

21 MR. KELLEY: Definitely.

22 MR. BERFIELD: Why?

23 MR. KELLEY: Because they're doing things that I  
24 feel are unethical.

1 MR. BERFIELD: For example?

2 MR. KELLEY: Twenty bucks a week for seventy hours  
3 seems a bit one-sided to me; things of that nature. If  
4 you -- I don't know about these people that are in the  
5 Rehabilitation Project Force; things of that nature.  
6 These things should be found out about. I don't think  
7 the people of Clearwater really know what's going on.  
8 They put up a good front over there.

9 MR. BERFIELD: Can you tell us any other things  
10 that you think we should know about or in your opinion  
11 we should be informed about?

12 Do you think health is a factor over there?

13 MR. KELLEY: I know that I got -- had blood  
14 poisoning a couple of times. But I don't know if that's  
15 still a problem now or not.

16 MR. BERFIELD: What about the safety of the people?

17 MR. KELLEY: Food poisoning, I'm sorry; food  
18 poisoning.

19 Pardon?

20 MR. BERFIELD: The safety of the people?

21 MR. KELLEY: I don't think they're in any great  
22 physical danger.

23 MR. BERFIELD: Do you think you could have evacuated  
24 that room with fifty some fellows if they had a fire?

1 MR. KELLEY: Yes, because we did it a couple of  
2 times. Two nights in a row we had fire alarms that went  
3 off.

4 MR. BERFIELD: Do you think, in your own mind, that  
5 there's been any - in the distribution of literature here  
6 in Clearwater - fraud or is there misrepresentation to  
7 the people of Clearwater?

8 MR. KELLEY: I have -- I'm not that familiar with  
9 what information has been dispensed to the people of  
10 Clearwater.

11 MR. BERFIELD: In the form of books and literature

12 MR. KELLEY: I always felt the literature was  
13 pretty wishy-washy, that it was just on the nature to  
14 appease the citizens of Clearwater.

15 See, Scientology -- this operation does not -- they  
16 really don't want anything to do with citizens of Clear-  
17 water. Their -- the people they're concerned with are  
18 the people that are already Scientologists. That's what  
19 they're interested in.

20 If this were a regular Scientology organization,  
21 they'd be trying to get the people of Clearwater into  
22 that building. As it is, they'd just as soon Clearwater  
23 left them alone. That's always the feeling we had when  
24 I was there. But if you must come in, we'll be cordial



1 and show you the chapel and that sort of thing. But  
2 their main interest lies in public -- in people that  
3 are already Scientologists.

4 MR. BERFIELD: Do you think health codes over there  
5 have been violated?

6 MR. KELLEY: I am not that familiar with health  
7 codes. I know when I was in the men's dormitory down  
8 there that was probably a violation, but that is no  
9 longer in existence, I would guess.

10 MR. BERFIELD: You made a general statement that  
11 the people of Clearwater should know about it.

12 If you had some announcement, what would you tell  
13 the people of Clearwater?

14 MR. KELLEY: If I was a citizen of Clearwater, I  
15 wouldn't want them in my town because it's a -- it's a  
16 dangerous organization.

17 MR. BERFIELD: Dangerous in what respect?

18 MR. KELLEY: Dangerous to the minds of young people.

19 MR. BERFIELD: Do you think they could have an  
20 effect on my children since they live here or just the  
21 ones coming in?

22 MR. KELLEY: It's -- I would -- I really don't feel  
23 like they pose that much of a threat to the City of  
24 Clearwater, because they really don't want to have any-

1           thing to do with Clearwater. They really don't want to  
2           deal with the people in Clearwater.

3                   But if it's looked upon favorably here, maybe it  
4           will be looked upon favorably elsewhere, see. And I  
5           don't think it should be looked upon favorably in the  
6           slightest at all, whether it be Clearwater or anywhere.

7                   MR. BERFIELD: But if I understand your statement,  
8           you would just alert the people of Clearwater that they  
9           are a dangerous organization?

10                   MR. KELLEY: In my opinion, they are; in my opinion,  
11           they are.

12                   MR. BERFIELD: You would -- you would or would not  
13           recommend anybody going into Scientology?

14                   MR. KELLEY: I would recommend against it with all  
15           my heart and soul going into it and getting out of it.

16                   That's another thing that I would like known. The  
17           average Scientologist doesn't know about some of these  
18           clandestine -- they don't know about any of these clan-  
19           destine activities that -- I don't know if anyone's  
20           testified on it or not. But some of the harrassment of  
21           Mr. -- former Mayor Cazares or the Saint Petersburg  
22           Times writers.

23                   They hear about that stuff, some of these harrass-  
24           ments, wire taps, and things, and these -- the Scientolo-

1           gist doesn't believe it. They figure that's just noise  
2           to sell papers, when, in fact, it's actually occurring.

3           The average Scientologist you see walking on the  
4           street probably isn't a bad person, but he's misled by  
5           the organization, by the policies of the organization.

6           MR. BERFIELD: Now, you say they're misled. Do you  
7           know this to be a fact?

8           MR. KELLEY: Yes.

9           MR. BERFIELD: Can you give us a for instance?

10          MR. KELLEY: The one for instance I give is an  
11          incident that happened to me in my home after I got out  
12          of Scientology, an incident of harrassment, which I don't  
13          know if it's -- that's a --

14          MR. LeCHER: That's very pertinent.

15          MR. KELLEY: When I was on leave -- well, before I  
16          went on leave in Portland or Vancouver, Washington where  
17          my brother lives, my brother called everyone from the  
18          FBI to the CIA on down to find out about Scientology. He  
19          kind of knew that it wasn't all that it was cracked up  
20          to be, but he didn't really know what to do about it  
21          until he called a lot of people -- a bunch of people  
22          until he got in contact with someone who knew about  
23          religious cults or cult activities.

24          So, when I came home, he had a stack -- you know,

1 he had a stack of papers, some affidavits and things like  
2 that. And he proceeded to ask me a few questions to  
3 which I didn't have logical answers for. So, I got out,  
4 and I decided to stay home.

5 But shortly -- the day after that, Bob and I -- we  
6 went to a business meeting in Seattle and left his wife  
7 at home alone. When we came back, we found her sitting  
8 in the closet with a gun in her hand terrified.

9 What had happened was is the day after Halloween,  
10 someone came to the door wearing a Halloween mask, knocked  
11 on the door, she opened -- it was a screen door. She  
12 opened up the door, they asked if Casey Kelley was there.  
13 She said, "No," and started to close the door on the  
14 people. They came into the house, harrassed her, exposed  
15 themselves, threatened her, saying, "You better leave  
16 Casey alone or it can get worse. Don't call the cops."  
17 That sort of thing.

18 No one else in that area knew I was there. I had  
19 no friends because I hadn't been there for three years.  
20 I had no friends in that area that would do something,  
21 you know, off the wall like that. My family didn't even  
22 know I was there, except -- with the exception of my  
23 brother. He was the only one who knew I was at his  
24 home.

1           That made it very real to me. That made it kind  
2 of hit home. The average Scientologist does not know  
3 about that sort of thing taking place. How can a  
4 religion do that if it's a bonafide religion?

5           MR. LeCHER: We don't want to --

6           MR. KELLEY: That's another --

7           MR. LeCHER: -- that's under religious beliefs  
8 and --

9           MR. KELLEY: That's right; I'm sorry.

10          MR. LeCHER: -- we don't want to hear about that.

11          MR. BERFIELD: Mayor, I could go on all evening --

12          MR. LeCHER: So could I, but I think we'd better switch  
13 around. We do have a meeting -- another meeting to  
14 attend - it's twenty-five to five - at five, and I have  
15 to go back to my colleagues to my right to see if they  
16 have something they would like to add.

17          MRS. GARVEY: I don't have a lot of questions to  
18 ask, but I can start in the morning.

19          MR. LeCHER: Is there anything you'd like to say  
20 in conclusion, sir?

21          MR. SHOEMAKER: Can you stay over, Mr. Kelley?

22          MR. KELLEY: Yes, I can.

23          MR. LeCHER: All right.

24          Why don't you stay over, then, and speak with Mr.

1 Flynn. There may be something we want to ask you again.

2 At this stage, ladies and gentlemen, this particular  
3 meeting is adjourned, and we'll reconvene with the regu-  
4 larly scheduled City Commission meeting at five o'clock.

5 (Whereupon, the hearing was  
6 adjourned until 9:00 a.m. on  
7 Friday, May 7, 1982.)

8

9

10

11

12

13

14

15

\*\*\*\*\*

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

1                                   C E R T I F I C A T I O N

2

3                   I, Karen E. Rizman, a certified court reporter and

4                   Notary Public, do hereby certify that the foregoing

5                   hearing transcript of the City of Clearwater Commission

6                   Hearings Re: The Church of Scientology, pages 4 through

7                   273, is a true and accurate transcription of my dictated

8                   tape recordings of the proceedings taken at the Clear-

9                   water City Hall, Clearwater Florida, on Thursday, May

10                  6, 1982.

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

Karen E. Rizman  
Karen E. Rizman



